THE INFLUENCE OF REAPPORTIONMENT ON THE DISTRIBUTION OF STATE AID TO EDUCATION

Thesis for the Degree of Ph. D.
MICHIGAN STATE UNIVERSITY
STEPHEN WHEELER BURKS
1973

THESIS

LIBRARY
Michigan State
University

This is to certify that the

thesis entitled

THE INFLUENCE OF REAPPORTIONMENT
ON THE DISTRIBUTION OF STATE AID TO EDUCATION

presented by

Stephen Wheeler Burks

has been accepted towards fulfillment
of the requirements for

Doctorate degree in Philosophy

Frank A. Pinner.

Major professor

Date November 2, 1972

O-7639

BINDING BY
HOAG & SONS'
BOOK BINDERY INC.
LIBRARY BINDERS
SPRINGPORT, MICHIGAN

JUN 25 '74 151
NOV 18 '74 R80
DEC 4 '74 338

G191
G83
JUL 27 '78

DING B
G & SONS'
BINDERY INC.
BY BINDERS

A

THE INFLUENCE OF
DISTRIBUTION OF

Stephe

This study examines the
istribution of state aid to loc
tates. The central hypothesis
f state aid between metropolit
tricts between 1962 and 1969 ar
otential voting power of metro
esulting from reapportionment
etropolitan legislative powe
egislature that are located w
easure is refined to account
opulations and socio-economi
sectional analysis of post-re

The results are gener
ost malapportioned states sh
politan school districts, th
howing both significant cha
ative power and minor chang

ABSTRACT

THE INFLUENCE OF REAPPORTIONMENT ON THE DISTRIBUTION OF STATE AID TO EDUCATION

By

Stephen Wheeler Burks

This study examines the influence of reapportionment on the distribution of state aid to local school districts in twenty-six states. The central hypothesis is that changes in the distribution of state aid between metropolitan and non-metropolitan school districts between 1962 and 1969 are directly related to changes in the potential voting power of metropolitan counties in state legislatures resulting from reapportionment. The major independent variable is "metropolitan legislative power," or the proportion of seats in the legislature that are located within SMSA counties. The basic power measure is refined to account for variations in central city-suburban populations and socio-economic heterogeneity, and used in a cross-sectional analysis of post-reapportionment aid patterns.

The results are generally inconclusive. While several of the most malapportioned states show dramatic shifts in aid toward metropolitan school districts, the overall pattern is much more dispersed, showing both significant changes in states with minor shifts in legislative power and minor changes in states with large shifts in power.

The absence of a clear rel

olitan power and increased metro

eneral factors: 1) the unavaila

ance between school districts an

the resulting imprecision of the

olical, incremental, and admin

ocess, which reduces the influ

e state aid appropriations; and

t not have the impact on the d

itionally been assumed.

The absence of a clear relationship between increased metropolitan power and increased metropolitan state aid are attributable to several factors: 1) the unavailability of data showing the correspondence between school districts and state legislative districts, and the resulting imprecision of the legislative power measure; 2) the cyclical, incremental, and administrative character of the budgetary process, which reduces the influence of legislative power arrangements on state aid appropriations; and 3) the fact that apportionment systems do not have the impact on the distribution of state aid that has traditionally been assumed.

THE INFLUENCE OF

DISTRIBUTION OF

Stephen

Mich
in partial fu

DO

Depart

THE INFLUENCE OF REAPPORTIONMENT ON THE DISTRIBUTION OF STATE AID TO EDUCATION

By

Stephen Wheeler Burks

A THESIS

Submitted to
Michigan State University
in partial fulfillment of the requirements
for the degree of

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

Department of Political Science

1973

3311

ACKNOWLEDGMEN

Only a small portion of t

dissertation can be acknowledged

list follow are to the people wh

The members of my disser

Zinner, and Charles Press--have

Mr. Press clarified much of my

available large quantities of s

Frank offered frequent reassura

get be well," and his detailed

draft made for a much improved

full to Bryan. As my major pro

prodding and conscientious, c

the job. More importantly, a

opportunities for professiona

dent that account for much o

political science.

Two extraordinary pe

in East Lansing much more th

Their warmth and hospitalit

from home," and their conta

G86311

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS AND DEDICATION

Only a small portion of the many debts one incurs in writing a dissertation can be acknowledged in print. The four sets of thanks that follow are to the people who helped the most along the way.

The members of my dissertation committee--Bryan Downes, Frank Pinner, and Charles Press--have been uniformly supportive and helpful. Mr. Press clarified much of my fuzzy thinking on apportionment and made available large quantities of source material from his own study. Frank offered frequent reassurances during the project that "all would yet be well," and his detailed and incisive criticisms of the first draft made for a much improved final product. I am particularly grateful to Bryan. As my major professor, he provided the good-natured prodding and conscientious, constructive criticism needed to complete the job. More importantly, as a friend he gave me encouragement and opportunities for professional development while still a graduate student that account for much of the good fortune that I have had in political science.

Two extraordinary people, John and Martha Seaman, made our stay in East Lansing much more than the typical graduate school "layover." Their warmth and hospitality provided us with the proverbial "home away from home," and their contagious zest for life frequently prevented an

...iring Ph.D. from taking himself
...ays remember their kindness.

My wife Margaret had the m...
...grind." For four and a half year...
...al weekends to ponder her decisio...
...nflagging good humor, patience, ...
...ible to complete the requirement...
...re credit for a degree than she...
...ientist ever had a better partn...

Finally, my family. My ...
...rsue with a rush typing job of...
...ver ever mentioning that she was...
...gration. Without her help I ...
...manuscript to send to the commi...
...y best friend and sharpest cri...
...hrough the years have shaped ...
...y parents, Paul and Edith Bur...
...size, and they gave me the f...
...needed to do, even when they ...

My father placed grea...
...is own life was a standard ...
...nough to see me complete th...
...been pleased and proud. It ...
...dedicated.

aspiring Ph.D. from taking himself and his work too seriously. We will always remember their kindness.

My wife Margaret had the misfortune of marrying an academic "grind." For four and a half years now she has had many lonely nights and weekends to ponder her decision. Throughout, she has maintained the unflagging good humor, patience, and understanding that has made it possible to complete the requirements for the degree. No wife ever shared more credit for a degree than she does for this one, and no political scientist ever had a better partner with whom to ply his trade.

Finally, my family. My aunt, Patricia Beuter, came to the rescue with a rush typing job of a large part of the initial draft without ever mentioning that she was in the midst of recovering from an eye operation. Without her help I would probably still be waiting for a manuscript to send to the committee. My brother Alan has always been my best friend and sharpest critic, and our heated political discussions through the years have shaped many of my interests in political science. My parents, Paul and Edith Burks, taught me to think and care and criticize, and they gave me the freedom to make mistakes and to do what I needed to do, even when they didn't understand. Few sons are so lucky.

My father placed great value on integrity and excellence, and his own life was a standard of the highest order. He did not live long enough to see me complete the degree, but I think that he would have been pleased and proud. It is to his memory that the dissertation is dedicated.

TABLE

LIST OF TABLES . . . . . .

LIST OF FIGURES . . . . . .

INTRODUCTION . . . . . .

Chapter

I. A REVIEW AND CRITIQUE

II. THE THEORETICAL CONTEX

III. APPORTIONMENT SYSTEMS

IV. METROPOLITAN DEMOGRAPH

V. ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATI

VI. THE CUMULATIVE EXPLAN

VII. CONCLUDING REMARKS.

BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . . .

APPENDIX . . . . . .

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Page

LIST OF TABLES v

LIST OF FIGURES viii

INTRODUCTION 1

Chapter

I. A REVIEW AND CRITIQUE OF THE LITERATURE 6

II. THE THEORETICAL CONTEXT 25

III. APPORTIONMENT SYSTEMS AND STATE AID TO EDUCATION 49

IV. METROPOLITAN DEMOGRAPHY AND STATE AID TO EDUCATION . . . 80

V. ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATIONS OF STATE AID PATTERNS 101

VI. THE CUMULATIVE EXPLANATORY POWER OF THE MODEL 132

VII. CONCLUDING REMARKS 156

BIBLIOGRAPHY 171

APPENDIX 189

LIST

Table

II-1. State Percent of Public

III-1. 1960 Metropolitan Popul
Metropolitan Legislat
Metropolitan Underrep

III-2. 1960 Metropolitan Popu
Metropolitan Legisla
Metropolitan Represe

III-3. Metropolitan Legislat
the Percent Increas

III-4. Changes in Metropolit
from High to Low .

III-5. 1962 State per Pupil
Aid, Ranked. . . .

III-6. 1962 Metropolitan Re

III-7. Percent Increase in
1962-1969, Ranked

III-8. Percent Increase in
1962-1969, Ranked

IV-1. 1960 Large City Me
Ranked . . . . .

IV-2. Percent Non-Whites
1960, Ranked .

IV-3. Correlation Coeff
Variables and S

IV-4. Correlation Coeff
Variables and

LIST OF TABLES

Table		Page
II-1.	State Percent of Public School Expenditures, 1970. . .	35
III-1.	1960 Metropolitan Population (percent), 1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power, and 1962 Metropolitan Underrepresentation	50
III-2.	1960 Metropolitan Population (percent), 1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power, and 1967 Metropolitan Representation.	53
III-3.	Metropolitan Legislative Power in 1962 and 1967, and the Percent Increase following Reapportionment . . .	58
III-4.	Changes in Metropolitan Legislative Power, Ranked from High to Low	61
III-5.	1962 State per Pupil Aid and Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, Ranked.	64
III-6.	1962 Metropolitan Relative Advantage, Ranked	66
III-7.	Percent Increase in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969, Ranked.	72
III-8.	Percent Increase in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969, Ranked.	76
IV-1.	1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (percent), Ranked	83
IV-2.	Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1960, Ranked	86
IV-3.	Correlation Coefficients for 1962 Apportionment Variables and State Aid Variables.	91
IV-4.	Correlation Coefficients for 1967 Apportionment Variables and 1969 State Aid Variables	91

LIST OF TABLES (cont.)

Table

IV-5. Correlation Coefficients
Variables and Changes

IV-6. Regression Statistics fo
and Metropolitan per P

IV-7. Regression Statistics f
and Metropolitan Rela

V-1. Percent of Students Att
1967, Ranked . . . .

V-2. Ranney Index of Party

V-3. 1967 Party Competition
Ranked . . . . . .

V-4. Regression Statistics
1969 Metropolitan p

V-5. Regression Statistics
1969 Metropolitan P

V-6. Regression Statistic
Changes in Metropo

V-7. Regression Statistic
Changes in Metropo
1962-1969. . . .

VI-1. Correlation Matrix
Regression Model

VI-2. Coefficients of Mu
Independent Vari
per Pupil Aid Re

VI-3. Backward Eliminati
Variable Change

VI-4. Cumulative Explan
Statistics for
in Metropolitar

VI-5. Coefficients of
Independent Va
Relative Advan

LIST OF TABLES (cont.)

Table		Page
IV-5.	Correlation Coefficients for Changes in Apportionment Variables and Changes in State Aid Variables	92
IV-6.	Regression Statistics for Apportionment Variables and Metropolitan per Pupil Aid	96
IV-7.	Regression Statistics for Apportionment Variables and Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	98
V-1.	Percent of Students Attending Public Schools in 1967, Ranked	112
V-2.	Ranney Index of Party Competition, Ranked.	116
V-3.	1967 Party Competition in State Legislatures, Ranked	119
V-4.	Regression Statistics for Control Variables and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid.	125
V-5.	Regression Statistics for Control Variables and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage	126
V-6.	Regression Statistics for Control Variables and Changes in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969 . .	127
V-7.	Regression Statistics for Control Variables and Changes in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969.	128
VI-1.	Correlation Matrix for Variables in State Aid Change Regression Model	134
VI-2.	Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid Regression Model	135
VI-3.	Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid. . . .	136
VI-4.	Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid Regression Model . . .	138
VI-5.	Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model.	139

LIST OF TABLES (cont.)

Table

VI-6. Backward Elimination Pro
Variable Change in Met
Advantage. . . . . .

VI-7. Cumulative Explanatory
Statistics for Indepe
Metropolitan Relative

VI-8. Correlation Matrix for
Regression Model . .

VI-9. Coefficients of Multip
Independent Variable
Aid Regression Model

VI-10. Backward Elimination
Variable Metropolit

VI-11. Cumulative Explanator
Statistics for Inde
Metropolitan per Pu

VI-12. Coefficients of Mult
Independent Variab
Advantage Regressi

VI-13. Backward Eliminatio
Variable Metropoli

VI-14. Cumulative Explanat
Statistics for In
Metropolitan Rela

LIST OF TABLES (cont.)

Table		Page
VI-6.	Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	140
VI-7.	Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model . .	141
VI-8.	Correlation Matrix for Variables in State Aid Regression Model	144
VI-9.	Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid Regression Model	146
VI-10.	Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable Metropolitan per Pupil Aid.	148
VI-11.	Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid Regression Model.	149
VI-12.	Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model	151
VI-13.	Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable Metropolitan Relative Advantage	152
VI-14.	Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model . .	154

LIST

Figure

III-1. 1960 Metropolitan Popul
Legislative Power. .

III-2. 1960 Metropolitan Popul
Legislative Power. .

III-3. Metropolitan Underrepr

III-4. Metropolitan Underrepr

III-5. 1962 Metropolitan Leg
per Pupil Aid. . .

III-6. 1962 Metropolitan Leg
Relative Advantage

III-7. 1967 Metropolitan Le
Metropolitan per P

III-8. 1967 Metropolitan Le
Metropolitan Relat

III-9. Change in Metropoli
and Change in Met

III-10. Change in Metropoli
and Change in Me
1962-1969. . . .

III-11. Change in Metropol
in Metropolitan

III-12. Change in Metropo
in Metropolitan

IV-1. 1967 Power 2 and

IV-2. 1967 Power 2 and

IV-3. 1967 Power 3 and

LIST OF FIGURES

Figure		Page
III-1.	1960 Metropolitan Population and 1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power.	189
III-2.	1960 Metropolitan Population and 1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power.	190
III-3.	Metropolitan Underrepresentation, 1962	191
III-4.	Metropolitan Underrepresentation, 1967	192
III-5.	1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power and Metropolitan per Pupil Aid.	193
III-6.	1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power and Metropolitan Relative Advantage	194
III-7.	1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid	195
III-8.	1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	196
III-9.	Change in Metropolitan Legislative Power, 1962-1967, and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969.	197
III-10.	Change in Metropolitan Legislative Power, 1962-1967, and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969.	198
III-11.	Change in Metropolitan Legislative Status and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid.	199
III-12.	Change in Metropolitan Legislative Status and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage	200
IV-1.	1967 Power 2 and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid . . .	201
IV-2.	1967 Power 2 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	202
IV-3.	1967 Power 3 and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid . . .	203

LIST OF FIGURES (cont.)

Figure

IV-4. 1967 Power 3 and 1969 M
Advantage. . . . . .

V-1. 1966 per Capita Persona
Metropolitan per Pupi

V-2. 1966 per Capita Person
Metropolitan Relativ

V-3. 1967 Educational Tax B
per Pupil Aid. . . .

V-4. 1967 Educational Tax
Relative Advantage

V-5. Change in Personal In
per Pupil Aid. . .

V-6. Change in Income and
Advantage. . . . .

V-7. 1966 Metropolitan Po
Metropolitan Relat

V-8. 1966 Metropolitan Po
Metropolitan Relat

V-9. 1960 Large City Met
thousands) and 19

V-10. 1960 Large City Met
thousands) and Ch
Aid, 1962-1969 .

V-11. 1960 Large City Me
thousands) and C
Advantage, 1962-

V-12. 1960 Large City Me
and 1969 Metropo

V-13. Percent Non-White
1969 and 1969 M

V-14. Percent Non-White
1960 and 1969 N

LIST OF FIGURES (cont.)

Figure		Page
IV-4.	1967 Power 3 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	204
V-1.	1966 per Capita Personal Income and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid	205
V-2.	1966 per Capita Personal Income and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	206
V-3.	1967 Educational Tax Burden and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid.	207
V-4.	1967 Educational Tax Burden and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage	208
V-5.	Change in Personal Income and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid.	209
V-6.	Change in Income and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	210
V-7.	1966 Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	211
V-8.	1966 Metropolitan Population (percent) and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage.	212
V-9.	1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid . . .	213
V-10.	1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969	214
V-11.	1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969	215
V-12.	1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (percent) and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage	216
V-13.	Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1969 and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid	217
V-14.	Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1960 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage. . . .	218

LIST OF FIGURES (cont.)

Figure

V-15. Percent Non-Whites in L
1960 and Change in Me
1962-1969. . . . . .

V-16. Change in Population a
Pupil Aid. . . . . .

V-17. Change in Population a
Relative Advantage .

V-18. Percent Students in Pu
Metropolitan per Pup

V-19. Percent Students in P
Metropolitan Relati

V-20. Ranney Index of Party
Metropolitan per Pu

V-21. Ranney Index of Party
Metropolitan Relat

V-22. Ranney Index of Part
Metropolitan per P

V-23. Ranney Index of Part
Metropolitan Relat

V-24. 1967 Party Competit
Pupil Aid. . . .

V-25. 1967 Party Competit
Relative Advantag

V-26. Milbrath Index of P
Metropolitan per

V-27. Milbrath Index of
Metropolitan Rel

V-28. Milbrath Index of
Metropolitan per

V-29. Milbrath Index of
Metropolitan Re

LIST OF FIGURES (cont.)

Figure — Page

V-15. Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1960 and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969. 219

V-16. Change in Population and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid. 220

V-17. Change in Population and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage 221

V-18. Percent Students in Public Schools in 1967 and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid 222

V-19. Percent Students in Public Schools in 1967 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage. 223

V-20. Ranney Index of Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid 224

V-21. Ranney Index of Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage. 225

V-22. Ranney Index of Party Competition and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969. 226

V-23. Ranney Index of Party Competition and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969 227

V-24. 1967 Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid. 228

V-25. 1967 Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage 229

V-26. Milbrath Index of Participation and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid 230

V-27. Milbrath Index of Participation and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage. 231

V-28. Milbrath Index of Participation and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969. 232

V-29. Milbrath Index of Participation and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969 233

LIST OF FIGURES (cont.)

Figure

V-30. Governor Vote Nearest 19
per Pupil Aid. . . .

V-31. Governor Vote Nearest 1
Relative Advantage .

V-32. State Percent of Total
1969 and 1969 Metrop

V-33. State Percent of Total
1969 and 1969 Metrop

V-34. State Percent of Total
1969 and Change in M
1962-1969. . . . .

V-35. State Percent of Tota
1969 and Change in
1962-1969. . . . .

LIST OF FIGURES (cont.)

Figure — Page

V-30. Governor Vote Nearest 1968 and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid. 234

V-31. Governor Vote Nearest 1968 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage 235

V-32. State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969 and 1969 Metropolitan per Pupil Aid 236

V-33. State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage. 237

V-34. State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969 and Change in Metropolitan per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969. 238

V-35. State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969 and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969. 239

INT

The role of the states i

ubject of growing interest to b

cientists. The uncertain succe

rograms of the mid and late 19

oncerning the level of governm

ppropriately and effectively a

ederal revenue sharing and we

ssue is whether the states ha

e responsibility for dealing

ems related essentially to t

merica. The evolution of Am

ears has been one of expansi

anifestation being an incre

ocal governmental agencies.

tal government as the inevi

echnological society.[3] Ot

nd constructive interactio

overnment.[4] Still others

unctions and responsibili

assume themselves.[5] All

ut the evidence on the l

INTRODUCTION

The role of the states in the American federal system is a subject of growing interest to both political leaders and political scientists. The uncertain success of the massive federal anti-poverty programs of the mid and late 1960's has raised a number of questions concerning the level of government at which such programs are most appropriately and effectively administered.[1] Current controversy over federal revenue sharing and welfare reform is of a similar order.[2] At issue is whether the states have the capability and/or desire to assume the responsibility for dealing with the above types of problems, problems related essentially to the development of urban and metropolitan America. The evolution of American federalism during the past fifty years has been one of expansion in the federal role, its major domestic manifestation being an increasingly strong tie between federal and local governmental agencies. Some view the expanded role of the federal government as the inevitable consequence of an industrialized, technological society.[3] Others see it as the development of positive and constructive interaction and cooperation among different levels of government.[4] Still others explain it in terms of accumulated federal functions and responsibilities that the states have been unwilling to assume themselves.[5] All of these explanations are in part correct, but the evidence on the latter is the most persuasive; the expanded

mestic role of the federal gover

ailure of the states to respond

olitical needs.

State problems have been

eming mainly from a lack of ti

. . . a good many of the weak
are unnecessary. These reco
lieve, are traceable to the
to reflect the modern viewpo
of their citizens. Often id
sion makers for state govern
this we mean that the ideolo
are beholden is not appropri
which to judge proposed publ
cause it is appropriate for
industrial society rather th
society.[6]

is position is shared and has

rtin in his book, The Cities

. . . three overriding defi
of mind and the mythology w
first is in orientation--mo
accordance with the rural
The second is in timeliness
states are anachronistic;
urgencies of the modern wo
ship--state leaders are by
tradition-bound, which ill
of modern government . . .

A major factor perpetu

rural domination of state

tionment. Until 1962, whe

onstitutional, states had

ote "the average value of t

average vote in the open

te legislature [was] conce

domestic role of the federal government is primarily the result of the failure of the states to respond to changing demographic patterns and political needs.

State problems have been characterized by Press and Adrian as stemming mainly from a lack of timeliness:

> . . . a good many of the weaknesses of state government are unnecessary. These recognized shortcomings, we believe, are traceable to the failure of state governments to reflect the modern viewpoints held by a large majority of their citizens. Often ideas dominant among the decision makers for state government lack timeliness. By this we mean that the ideology to which decision makers are beholden is not appropriate as a yardstick against which to judge proposed public policies for today because it is appropriate for a rural, small town, pre-industrial society rather than our contemporary urban society.[6]

This position is shared and has been elaborated upon at length by Roscoe Martin in his book, The Cities and the Federal System. He notes,

> . . . three overriding deficiencies flow from the state of mind and the mythology which grip the states. The first is in orientation--most states are governed in accordance with the rural traditions of an earlier day. The second is in timeliness--the governments of most states are anachronistic; they lack relevance to the urgencies of the modern world. The third is in leadership--state leaders are by confession cautious and tradition-bound, which ill equips them for the tasks of modern government . . .[7]

A major factor perpetuating this lack of timeliness has been the rural domination of state legislatures through policies of malapportionment. Until 1962, when the Supreme Court ruled malapportionment unconstitutional, states had ignored changes in population to the point where "the average value of the vote in the big city was less than half the average vote in the open country, so far as electing members of the state legislature [was] concerned."[8]

A precondition to any re-e
nstitutional role in the federal
ness and responsiveness in thei
tates, this means greater attent
rban and metropolitan areas. T
vided the basis for such a shift
epresentation in state legislat
In many states reapportionment
ive power has shifted from non
ontrol of the legislature give
or redirecting state resources
reas. To the extent that the
active partners in the federal

The purpose of the pre
reapportionment on the distri
entral hypothesis to be test
state aid between 1962 and 19
tructure of representation

review the literature on mal
ses. In Chapter Two, these
ontext and an alternative
ship between apportionment
through Six will present th
Seven will relate these fi
onclusions, and make sugg

A precondition to any re-establishment by the states of their constitutional role in the federal system is a greater degree of timeliness and responsiveness in their legislative policy making. In most states, this means greater attention to the problems and needs of urban and metropolitan areas. The reapportionment decisions have provided the basis for such a shift by essentially eliminating rural overrepresentation in state legislatures in the course of only five years. In many states reapportionment has meant that the balance of legislative power has shifted from non-metropolitan to metropolitan areas. Control of the legislature gives metropolitan legislators the potential for redirecting state resources that have traditionally favored rural areas. To the extent that they do so, states are likely to become more active partners in the federal system than they have been to date.

The purpose of the present study is to examine the impact of reapportionment on the distribution of state aid to education. The central hypothesis to be tested is that changes in the distribution of state aid between 1962 and 1969 are directly related to changes in the structure of representation in state legislatures. The study will first review the literature on malapportionment and state policy in Chapter One. In Chapter Two, these findings will be placed in a theoretical context and an alternative model presented for examining the relationship between apportionment systems and state policy. Chapters Three through Six will present the findings of the data analysis, and Chapter Seven will relate these findings to the hypotheses, draw appropriate conclusions, and make suggestions for future research.

INT

[1] See, for example, the a
Martin Rein in their book, Dilem
ago, 1969), esp. pp. 224-239.
governable units of governme
Future of Democracy," American
pt. 4 (December 1967), 953-970.

[2] A recent analysis of t
forms in state government befo
Press, Revenue Sharing: Crutc
ment? (New York: Praeger, 197
no strings grants from the fed
Walter Heller, New Dimensions
1966).

[3] Two arguments of thi
are: E. E. Schattschneider,
Rinehart and Winston, 1960),
tribution of Power in America

[4] The famous metaphor
relations of State and Federal A
rightly the best example of thi
Intergovernmental Relations"
Lester Levine and Douglas St
Readings in American Federal
Publishers Inc., 1969).

[5] A major proponent
in The Cities and the Fede

[6] Charles Press and
are Sick," in Charles Press
the Fifty States (Chicago:

Notes

[1]See, for example, the arguments presented by Peter Marris and Martin Rein in their book, Dilemmas of Social Reform (New York: Atherton, 1969), esp. pp. 224-239. Robert Dahl has dealt with the question of governable units of government in his article, "The City in the Future of Democracy," American Political Science Review, Vol. LXI, No. 4 (December 1967), 953-970.

[2]A recent analysis of this issue that calls for significant reforms in state government before revenue sharing is enacted by Henry S. Reuss, Revenue Sharing: Crutch or Catalyst for State and Local Government? (New York: Praeger, 1970). The alternative view, calling for no strings grants from the federal government to states is found in Walter Heller, New Dimensions of Political Economy (New York: Norton, 1966).

[3]Two arguments of this type from very different perspectives are: E. E. Schattschneider, The Semi-Sovereign People (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1960), Chapter 5, and Talcott Parsons, "The Distribution of Power in American Society," World Politics (October 1957).

[4]The famous metaphor of the "marble-cake" of inter-related functions of State and Federal Agencies developed by Daniel Elazar is probably the best example of this interpretation. See his "Federalism and Intergovernmental Relations" in Daniel Elazar, R. Bruce Carroll, E. Lester Levine and Douglas St. Angelo (eds.), Cooperation and Conflict: Readings in American Federalism (Itasca, Illinois: F. E. Peacock Publishers Inc., 1969).

[5]A major proponent of this position is Roscoe C. Martin. See his The Cities and the Federal System (New York: Atherton, 1965).

[6]Charles Press and Charles Adrian, "Why out State Governments are Sick," in Charles Press and Charles Adrian (eds.), Democracy in the Fifty States (Chicago: Rand McNally, 1966), p. 347.

[7]Martin, op. cit., p. 79.

[8]Paul T. David and Ralph E
al Suburban Vote, Volume 1 (Char
ginia Bureau of Public Adminis

[7]Martin, op. cit., p. 79.

[8]Paul T. David and Ralph Eisenberg, Devaluation of the Urban and Suburban Vote, Volume 1 (Charlottesville, Va.: University of Virginia Bureau of Public Administration, 1961), p. 1.

C

A REVIEW AND CRI

The influence of malappo

erican federalism notwithstand

ess remains unclear. The sta

s that it works to the disadva

eas. Such an argument carrie

e first is that the metropol

y with values and interests

e second is that if metropol

ion in state legislatures,

istribution of state resourc

at a greater share of state

e problems that metropolit

emselves.

These assumptions ar

portionment on state polici

odies or research. The fi

icularly roll call voting;

iture and income redistri

will first be summarized a

CHAPTER I

A REVIEW AND CRITIQUE OF THE LITERATURE

The influence of malapportionment on the overall character of American federalism notwithstanding, its impact on specific state policies remains unclear. The standard argument against malapportionment is that it works to the disadvantage of central city and suburban areas. Such an argument carries with it several implicit assumptions. The first is that the metropolis is somehow a cohesive, distinct entity with values and interests in opposition to the rest of the state. The second is that if metropolitan areas were given greater representation in state legislatures, they would act as a bloc to shift the distribution of state resources more in their favor. The third is that a greater share of state resources for urban areas would alleviate the problems that metropolitan areas are unable to effectively solve themselves.

These assumptions and others relating to the impact of reapportionment on state policies have been challenged by two separate bodies or research. The first deals with legislative behavior, particularly roll call voting; the second, with the correlates of expenditure and income redistribution policies. The findings of both sets will first be summarized and then critiqued.

egislative Behavior

A prerequisite to metrop

ures is a degree of unity and

ators in supporting relevant l

easured this in terms of cohes

tat metropolitan and non-metro

ther in unified voting blocs.

egislatures, David Derge conc

. . . the traditional beli
metropolitan and non-metro
legislature must be reject
at least at the roll-call
support such a conclusion

1. Non-metropolitan
together with hig
politan legislato

2. Metropolitan legi
together with hi

3. Metropolitan leg
vailing side whe
high cohesion.[1]

a similar study of the Oh

Considering both the Hou
the validity of the meth
avoidable that urban-ru
although urban-rural co
quent occasions. . . .
with that reached in a
Missouri. It may be in
these results that urba
tant in the operations
the conclusion must be

These findings are

and others in Indiana, Fri

in Michigan.[3] All of thes

Legislative Behavior

A prerequisite to metropolitan effectiveness in state legislatures is a degree of unity and cooperation among metropolitan legislators in supporting relevant legislation. Several researchers have measured this in terms of cohesion on roll call votes and have found that metropolitan and non-metropolitan legislators seldom oppose each other in unified voting blocs. In a study of the Illinois and Missouri legislatures, David Derge concluded,

> . . . the traditional belief in bitter conflict between metropolitan and non-metropolitan areas in the state legislature must be rejected for Illinois and Missouri, at least at the roll-call stage. The following findings support such a conclusion:
>
> 1. Non-metropolitan legislators seldom vote together with high cohesion against metropolitan legislators.
> 2. Metropolitan legislators usually do not vote together with high cohesion.
> 3. Metropolitan legislators are usually on the prevailing side when they do vote together with high cohesion.[1]

In a similar study of the Ohio legislature, Flinn concluded:

> Considering both the House and the Senate and assuming the validity of the method used, the conclusion is unavoidable that urban-rural factionalism does not exist although urban-rural conflict may occur on very infrequent occasions. . . . This conclusion is consistent with that reached in a recent study of Illinois and Missouri. It may be inferred from the similarity of these results that urban-rural factionalism is unimportant in the operations of two-party legislatures although the conclusion must be tentative pending further study.[2]

These findings are generally consistent with those of Hamilton and others in Indiana, Friedman in Tennessee, and Becker and others in Michigan.[3] All of these studies, but particularly the latter,

gest that whatever cohesion ex

related more to party than to

the factors associated with le

ban-rural issue is dominant in

uthern states,[4] that constitue

or predictors of legislative v

ally perceive constituency pre

luencing their behavior.[6] T

ing is political party, alth

e a variety of factors and a

In sum, this research

politan and urban legislator

e together as a bloc on mar

at arise in state legislatu

ed ones--within metropolita

According to this arg

eas prevent legislators fro

is the heterogeneous, frac

ther than metropolitan und

at accounts for whatever r

tate policy.

Correlates of Expenditures
Income Redistribution

A second body of re

portionment on state polic

suggest that whatever cohesion exists among metropolitan legislators is related more to party than to constituency factors. Other research on the factors associated with legislative voting suggests that the urban-rural issue is dominant in only a few, rural, predominantly southern states,[4] that constituency characteristics are relatively poor predictors of legislative voting,[5] and that state legislators generally perceive constituency pressures as being relatively minor factors influencing their behavior.[6] The single best predictor of legislative voting is political party, although even its influence is contingent upon a variety of factors and appears to be diminishing.[7]

In sum, this research suggests, with Jewell, that, ". . . Metropolitan and urban legislators cannot realistically be expected to vote together as a bloc on many issues. The most controversial issues that arise in state legislatures usually cause divisions--often very deep ones--within metropolitan areas."[8]

According to this argument, if divisions within metropolitan areas prevent legislators from voting cohesively on most issues, then it is the heterogeneous, fragmented nature of the metropolis itself rather than metropolitan underrepresentation in the state legislature that accounts for whatever non-metropolitan "biases" may exist in state policy.

Correlates of Expenditures and Income Redistribution

A second body of research challenging the influence of malapportionment on state policy is a series of studies using input-output

odels, aggregate data, and corr

ligues. These studies have evol

stages. The first stage examine

evelopment" and "political syst

n the fifty states.[9] Thomas Dy

...system characteristics
independent effect on policy
economic development shapes
policy outcomes, and most o
occurs between system chara
comes can be attributed to
development.[10]

s conclusion on the influence

On the whole, the policy ch
legislatures are not notice
policy choices of well-appo
Most of the policy differen
out to be a product of soci
among the states rather tha
apportionment practices.[11]

The second stage of th

mber of variables initially

ze the underlying dimensions

ing this technique, Sharkans

While these findings add t
ical and economic determin
they offer little encourag
seek to expand the level a
ices by manipulating one
characteristic of state g
turnout, party competitio
is apparent only that cer
having to do with voter t
petition are related to c

In the third stage of

ific policy, has been redef

models, aggregate data, and correlation-regression statistical techniques. These studies have evolved through three fairly distinct stages. The first stage examined the relative impact of "economic development" and "political system" variables on expenditure levels in the fifty states.[9] Thomas Dye's conclusions are representative:

> . . . system characteristics have relatively little independent effect on policy outcomes in the states. Economic development shapes both political systems and policy outcomes, and most of the association that occurs between system characteristics and policy outcomes can be attributed to the influence of economic development.[10]

His conclusion on the influence of malapportionment is similar:

> On the whole, the policy choices of malapportioned legislatures are not noticeably different from the policy choices of well-apportioned legislatures. Most of the policy differences which do occur turn out to be a product of socio-economic differences among the states rather than a direct product of apportionment practices.[11]

The second stage of this research consisted of increasing the number of variables initially considered, factor analyzing them to isolate the underlying dimensions, and then correlating the factor scores. Using this technique, Sharkansky and Hofferbert conclude that:

> While these findings add to the inquiry into political and economic determinants of public policies, they offer little encouragement to those [who] would seek to expand the level and scope of public services by manipulating one political or structural characteristic of state government (e.g., voter turnout, party competition, or apportionment). It is apparent only that certain aspects of politics having to do with voter turnout and interparty competition are related to certain public policies.[12]

In the third stage of this research, the dependent variable, public policy, has been redefined in terms other than expenditure levels.

their study of the determinant

the impact of revenues and expen

Not only do the political var
impact on redistributive poli
also account for considerably
redistribution than do socio

are again, however, despite a s

ct of political variables and

ect by itself is found to be u

These three sets of fin

ates complement the roll call

the structure of representatio

ects of malapportionment has

tates adopt. The techniques

imitations themselves, howeve

rawing any conclusions regar

A Critique of Roll-Call and Correlation-Regression Studie

The absence of an ur

ess not also mean that thes

as Jewell has noted:

> Although urban and rura
> man opposing barricades
> attitudes have been dif
> many issues of importan
> imize these differences
> legislators have compro
> from the rural majorit

In their study of the determinants of variation in the net redistributive impact of revenues and expenditures, Fry and Winters conclude:

> Not only do the political variables have an independent impact on redistributive policies in the states; they also account for considerably more of the variance in redistribution than do socioeconomic variables.[13]

Once again, however, despite a significant relationship between the set of political variables and redistributive policies, malapportionment by itself is found to be unimportant.

These three sets of findings using aggregate data for all fifty states complement the roll call studies noted above in suggesting that the structure of representation in state legislatures related to policies of malapportionment has a minimal impact on the types of policies states adopt. The techniques used in these studies are not without limitations themselves, however, and deserve closer examination before drawing any conclusions regarding malapportionment and policy.

A Critique of Roll-Call and Correlation-Regression Studies

The absence of an urban-rural dimension in roll call voting does not also mean that these forces are not present in the legislature. As Jewell has noted:

> Although urban and rural legislators do not instinctively man opposing barricades when the roll is called, their attitudes have been different in most legislatures on many issues of importance. Voting records probably minimize these differences because the outnumbered urban legislators have compromised in order to win concessions from the rural majority . . .[14]

In his study of urban-rur

ext the techniques of Derge and

The bloc-identification metho
that each substantive issue
or more points in the legisl
votes . . . [I]t can be said
not safe in Kansas. To be s
passage is required by the K
vote is rarely the decisive
measures, even many of the
the green light in the comm
record vote and the final v
by a base constitutional ma
and not voting . . .[15]

In their study of educa

sters and his colleagues conc

. . . it seems fair to say
cally never unite to oppos
Rather, there is a kind of
difference which must freq
in order to enact urban le

Several other case st

ues in legislatures have sh

ults are more significant th

minant types of cleavages

The attitudes and no

e dimension of the urban-ru

s the lack of "timeliness"

ated earlier. In his Kans

alism";

. . . the formal repres
legislature have develo
of institutionalized i
tuents' interests with
government . . .[18]

In his study of urban-rural conflict in Kansas, Page concludes that the techniques of Derge and others are not applicable in his state:

> The bloc-identification method depends on the assumption that each substantive issue is tested decisively at one or more points in the legislative process by recorded votes . . . [I]t can be said that such an assumption is not safe in Kansas. To be sure, a record vote on final passage is required by the Kansas constitution, but this vote is rarely the decisive test of the process. Many measures, even many of the controversial measures, get the green light in the committee of the whole without a record vote and the final vote is perfunctory approval by a base constitutional majority . . . with many absent and not voting . . .[15]

In their study of educational politics in the Midwest, Nicholas Masters and his colleagues concluded:

> . . . it seems fair to say that rural interests practically never unite to oppose united urban interests. Rather, there is a kind of presumptive urban-rural difference which must frequently be negotiated away in order to enact urban legislation.[16]

Several other case studies of the nature of urban-rural differences in legislatures have shown that the processes preceding roll calls are more significant than the votes themselves in revealing the dominant types of cleavages that influence legislative behavior.[17]

The attitudes and norms of the legislature are another aspect or dimension of the urban-rural conflict. One manifestation of this is the lack of "timeliness" in the thinking of many rural legislators noted earlier. In his Kansas study, Page refers to it as "symbolic localism";

> . . . the formal representation of rural areas in the legislature have developed a symbolic localism, a type of institutionalized identification of their constituents' interests with the tax interests of rural local government . . .[18]

Independent of the facto

estions as to the utility of u

easuring urban-rural cleavages

ations in the roll call technic

dity of its findings. Derge's

ll "contested" roll calls for

or the entire group of votes.

portant variation in voting a

iling to distinguish the nat

otes.

Some types of votes re

articularly on a vote such as

here are so many sub-appropr

ading that the final vote i

a series of bargains and t

fficient support for passa

In a malapportioned

clude a disproportionate n

taining that majority are

rural districts. Even i

e included in the majorit

dvantage their districts a

eir pivotal position in c

The correlation-re

ci impacts in the fifty s

Independent of the factors just mentioned that raise some questions as to the utility of using roll call votes as the basis for measuring urban-rural cleavages in a state, there are also some limitations in the roll call technique itself that cast doubt on the validity of its findings. Derge's study, the most often cited, aggregated all "contested" roll calls for a given period and examined the patterns for the entire group of votes. By doing this, it ignored potentially important variation in voting alignments across issues, as well as failing to distinguish the nature of the contested vs. uncontested votes.

Some types of votes reveal valid coalitions better than others. Particularly on a vote such as an educational appropriations bill, there are so many sub-appropriations and "riders" subsumed under one heading that the final vote is likely to be merely a formal endorsement of a series of bargains and trades that have gone on beforehand to gain sufficient support for passage.

In a malapportioned legislature, any majority will necessarily include a disproportionate number of rural legislators. The costs of attaining that majority are likely to be a distribution of aid favorable to rural districts. Even if only a minimum number of rural legislators are included in the majority, the distribution of aid will tend to advantage their districts and others they choose to benefit because of their pivotal position in creating that majority.

The correlation-regression studies of policy outputs, outcomes, and impacts in the fifty states is a relatively new and very different

pe of analysis from the roll ca

dings of these studies at dif

dicates that the findings are

chniques, measures, and defini

litical variables can be shown

re than socio-economic variab

s income redistribution, and a

ed as per capita expenditure

litical variables is greater

separate variables, are exa

arly shapes their findings.

e drawn from this research a

r different governmental se

economic development, whil

e income redistribution po

rics of the political syst

end more money, independen

system, is significant and

assumptions about the centr

king, but it is only an i

e factors influencing sta

his research will be give

In sum, although t

pression studies challe

arding the influence of

nclusions based on this

type of analysis from the roll call studies. The variation in the findings of these studies at different stages in their development indicates that the findings are at least in part artifacts of the techniques, measures, and definitions that are used. The fact that political variables can be shown to have a greater independent influence than socio-economic variables on policy when policy is defined as income redistribution, and a lesser influence when policy is defined as per capita expenditures, and that the relative impact of political variables is greater when presented as factor scores than as separate variables, are examples of how the design of such studies clearly shapes their findings. The only conclusion that can validly be drawn from this research at present is that state expenditure levels for different governmental services are primarily related to the level of economic development, while the distribution of its resources and its income redistribution policies are primarily related to characteristics of the political system. To find that states having more money spend more money, independent of the characteristics of the political system, is significant and challenges a number of traditionally held assumptions about the centrality of the political system in policy making, but it is only an initial step toward a precise explanation of the factors influencing state policy. A more detailed criticism of this research will be given in the next chapter.

In sum, although the findings of roll call and correlation-regression studies challenge some of the traditional assumptions regarding the influence of apportionment systems on state policies, any conclusions based on this research are likely to be premature.

The Conceptualization of Policy

A major limitation of th

to specify the dimensions of leg

that are most likely to be rela

nalization of policy has been

reviewing developments in local

Lipsky note:

> ... Most of the analyse
> of several dimensions [of
> out showing an awareness t
> involved. Most frequently
> level of expenditure, prog
> pact. In addition, we car
> dimension: the distributi
> tion . . . Thus to unders
> level one must understand
> buted to school districts
> tion unfortunately are ra
> (an interesting political
> of data cannot deter poli
> gating what may be the mo
> outputs.[19]

In a more recent art

public policy, Robert Salisb

Theodore Lowi and distinguis

"regulatory," and "self-regu

active" policy as follows:

> . . . those perceived t
> or more groups. Typica
> with little or no confl
> legislation, but only
> bution of the shares.

"redistributive policy is c

The Conceptualization of Policy

A major limitation of the studies cited above is their failure to specify the dimensions of legislative structure, process, or policy that are most likely to be related. Concern over the lack of conceptualization of policy has been the strongest. In an important article reviewing developments in local and state politics research, Jacob and Lipsky note:

> . . . Most of the analyses we have cited use measures of several dimensions [of policy] indiscriminately without showing an awareness that more than one dimension is involved. Most frequently used are measures of the level of expenditure, program quality, and program impact. In addition, we can identify at least one other dimension: the distribution of benefits among a population . . . Thus to understand the politics at the state level one must understand how grants-in-aid are distributed to school districts . . . Measures of distribution unfortunately are rarely available in public records (an interesting political fact in itself). But the lack of data cannot deter political scientists from investigating what may be the most important dimension of policy outputs.[19]

In a more recent article also dealing with the dimensions of public policy, Robert Salisbury builds on the policy typology of Theodore Lowi and distinguishes among "distributive," "redistributive," "regulatory," and "self-regulatory" policies.[20] He defines "distributive" policy as follows:

> . . . those perceived to confer direct benefits upon one or more groups. Typically such policies are determined with little or no conflict over the passage of the legislation, but only over the size and specific distribution of the shares.

Redistributive policy is characterized as

. . . also confer[ring] bene
to take benefits away from o
involve more intense conflic
the legitimacy of the actio
content . . .[21]

The implication of thes

ent and state policy is clear:

ral over-representation in th

ten more in policies involvin

ican in the other types cited

It follows from the ab

ctly related to rural favori

e limited evidence on the s

patterns of apportionment,

ental Relations concluded:

> The 1960 and 1962 reports
> reveal that its observers
> present apportionment of
> state grants-in-aid or t
> government, and labor an
> vations are in accord wi
> merous comments made to
> preparation of this repo

gress and Adrian come to a

> Because legislation and
> states, constitutional
> only with its approval,
> levy a special price wh
> most obvious result of
> ticut, for example, des
> structed so that towns
> ceived $27.19 per stud
> received $4.95 per stu
> with an enrollment of
> the state-aid formula
> son County with 7,200
> $100,000 more in state

> . . . also confer[ring] benefits, but also [is] perceived to take benefits away from other groups. They therefore involve more intense conflict over passage itself, over the legitimacy of the action as well as the specific content . . .[21]

The implication of these typologies for research on apportionment and state policy is clear: since malapportionment is essentially rural over-representation in the legislature, its impact should be seen more in policies involving the distribution of state resources than in the other types cited above.

It follows from the above that malapportionment should be directly related to rural favoritism in the distribution of state aid. The limited evidence on the subject is inconsistent. In a 1962 study of patterns of apportionment, the Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations concluded:

> The 1960 and 1962 reports of the National Municipal League reveal that its observers find the greatest effect of present apportionment of state legislatures involves state grants-in-aid or the allocation of funds to local government, and labor and welfare matters. These observations are in accord with other studies as well as numerous comments made to the Commission staff during the preparation of this report.[22]

Press and Adrian come to a similar conclusion:

> Because legislation and, in more than two-thirds of the states, constitutional amendments as well can be proposed only with its approval, the small-town bloc will often levy a special price when it agrees to act. This is the most obvious result of its control. A study in Connecticut, for example, described a state aid formula constructed so that towns with less than 500 population received $27.19 per student while cities of over 100,000 received $4.95 per student. In Colorado, Denver schools with an enrollment of 90,000 received $2,300,000 under the state-aid formula while the schools of nearby Jefferson County with 7,200 fewer children enrolled received $100,000 more in state aid. The same pattern is

frequently repeated in state
fare grants, police protecti
and almost every other purpo

More recently, Jewell c

The widespread, discernible
important effect of malappo
has been the impact on stat
The formulas used for distr
roads, education, and other
given this proportionate we
weight to population.[24]

On the other hand, in

those described above, Brad

. . . all the heavily popu
less than their fair share
situation is just as comm
as in poorly apportioned
to argue that malapportio
on the share of revenue t
receive.[25]

One explanation for

studies in specific stat

fifty states is the relative

the latter. The appropri

apportionment based essenti

districts to examine its im

measure of state aid distri

counties with over 250,000

Reynolds' conclusions shoul

ism given other correlati

frequently repeated in state aid for local roads, welfare grants, police protection, library facilities, and almost every other purpose.[23]

More recently, Jewell concluded:

> The widespread, discernible, and probably the most important effect of malapportionment on legislation has been the impact on state aid to local government. The formulas used for distributing state funds for roads, education, and other purposes have frequently given this proportionate weight to area and little weight to population.[24]

On the other hand, in a correlation-regression study similar to those described above, Brady and Edmonds found that:

> . . . all the heavily populated counties are getting less than their fair share of state revenue. But this situation is just as common in well apportioned states as in poorly apportioned ones. . . . [W]e are inclined to argue that malapportionment has little or no effect on the share of revenue that counties of different size receive.[25]

One explanation for the inconsistency between the findings of the studies in specific states and those using aggregate data for all fifty states is the relative "crudeness" of the summary measures used in the latter. The appropriateness of using a summary measure of malapportionment based essentially on variation in the size of legislative districts to examine its impact on policy is open to question, as is a measure of state aid distribution which distinguishes simply between counties with over 250,000 population and those with less. Brady and Edmonds' conclusions should therefore be treated with the same skepticism given other correlation-regression studies.

apportionment and Policy Chang

The reapportionment dec

istory of non-involvement in s

squarely in what Justice Fra

icket" of deciding what const

epresentation. Although the

of variation in the size o

ised questions such as the s

rrisan composition, how ofte

portion them, and other issu

ce upon. The background, m

ences of the decisions are

despite these complexities, a

entrenched opposition to reap

ings were enacted with su

to note, ". . . [B]etwee

all significant malappo

states had virtually di

The full impact of

years to come. As with

ffer as to the likely con

well and Patterson forese

olicies:

The most direct effect
likely to be on taxing
are likely in both the
authority given to cit

Reapportionment and Policy Change

The reapportionment decisions of the Supreme Court reversed a history of non-involvement in state apportionment systems and placed it squarely in what Justice Frankfurter referred to as "the political thicket" of deciding what constitutes equitable systems of legislative representation. Although the decisions dealt directly with the problem of variation in the size of legislative districts, they left unresolved questions such as the size of districts, their demographic and partisan composition, how often they should be changed, who should reapportion them, and other issues that the courts must now ultimately rule upon. The background, merits, implications and expected consequences of the decisions are subjects of an extensive literature.[26] Despite these complexities, and despite extensive and politically well-entrenched opposition to reapportionment in many states, the Court rulings were enacted with surprising ease, permitting Frederickson and Cho to note, ". . . [B]etween the Supreme Court's decision in 1962 and 1968 all significant malapportionment in the legislatures of the American states had virtually disappeared."[27]

The full impact of the decisions will not be known for a number of years to come. As with the assessment of malapportionment, "experts" differ as to the likely consequences of reapportionment on state policy. Jewell and Patterson foresee significant changes in taxing and spending policies:

> The most direct effect [of reapportionment on policy] is likely to be on taxing and spending policies. Changes are likely in both the types of taxes levied and in the authority given to cities to levy taxes. More important

and more certain changes can
formulas adopted for the dis
so as to overcome the gross
of sparsely populated counti

Herbert Jacob, on the other hand

gression researchers in his c

It is improbable that it [r
stantially envigorate state
the stalemates which sap p

So few studies of the

een completed that it is diff

ons is more correct. In one

the Georgia Legislature, I

etropolitan legislators incr

fluencing policy more in th

nother study of the same le

. . . The Georgia study
apportionment do affect
is detectable when intra
ment are studied. The
systems may not be dete
variations in apportion
cannot confidently conc
the direct or major cau
rate of municipal assoc
urban successes in urba
of these changes began
seem partially the res
urbanization and the g
Indeed, much in the da
an environmental facto
variable in Georgia.
brought in more urban
liberal, and who are
winning more often, w
degree reapportionmen
policy changes since
observable now, in ac
ment will be an impo
choices.[31]

> and more certain changes can be anticipated in the formulas adopted for the distribution of state aid, so as to overcome the gross discrimination in favor of sparsely populated counties in some states.[28]

Herbert Jacob, on the other hand, is typical of the correlation-regression researchers in his conclusion that:

> It is improbable that it [reapportionment] will substantially envigorate state governments or dissolve the stalemates which sap public confidence in them.[29]

So few studies of the actual impact of reapportionment have been completed that it is difficult to know which of the two predictions is more correct. In one study of changes in voting behavior in the Georgia Legislature, Ira Sharkansky found that cohesion among metropolitan legislators increased as they gained the potential for influencing policy more in their favor through reapportionment.[30] In another study of the same legislature, Brett Hawkins concluded

> . . . The Georgia study suggests that variations in apportionment do affect policy, and that this influence is detectable when intrastate variations in apportionment are studied. The true impact of apportionment systems may not be detectable when only interstate variations in apportionment are studied . . . [W]e cannot confidently conclude that reapportionment is the direct or major cause of the increased success rate of municipal association measures of increased urban successes in urban-relevant policy areas. Some of these changes began before reapportionment; and all seem partially the result of such other variables as urbanization and the growing saliency of urban needs. Indeed, much in the data suggests that urbanization, an environmental factor, is an important explanatory variable in Georgia. But because reapportionment has brought in more urban representatives, who are more liberal, and who are voting together more often, and winning more often, we conclude that to some unknown degree reapportionment has been a factor in observed policy changes since reapportionment . . . Changes observable now, in addition, suggest that reapportionment will be an important factor in future policy choices.[31]

The only study of reapp

echniques and aggregate data

y Frederickson and Cho. Thei

has had a significant impact o

The evidence [is] especial
has resulted in a distinc
state aid formulae agains
larly in education. It s
who argued that reapporti
in the way a state apport
They were particularly co
state fiscal discriminati
would decline with reappo

Although provocative

study is no more conceptuall

its predecessors. Even thou

by addressing the question

change rather than making i

of malapportionment, the li

present; large numbers of

explanation as to their in

ships between various inde

presented, the only statis

ation (R^2) and significa

dent variables; and the m

rather than direct.

The only study of reapportionment using correlation-regression techniques and aggregate data from all the states has been conducted by Frederickson and Cho. Their findings suggest that reapportionment has had a significant impact on policy:

> The evidence [is] especially strong that reapportionment has resulted in a distinct lessening in the disparity in state aid formulae against metropolitan areas--particularly in education. It seems clear, then, that those who argued that reapportionment would make a difference in the way a state apportions its funds were correct. They were particularly correct in their prediction that state fiscal discrimination against urban interests would decline with reapportionment.[32]

Although provocative in its findings, the Frederickson and Cho study is no more conceptually precise or theoretically informed than its predecessors. Even though it improves upon the earlier research by addressing the question of reapportionment from a perspective of change rather than making inferences based on cross-sectional measures of malapportionment, the limitations of the earlier studies are still present; large numbers of independent variables are still used without explanation as to their inclusion in the model; the basic relationships between various independent and dependent variables are never presented, the only statistics being coefficients of multiple determination (R^2) and significance levels for different clusters of independent variables; and the measures of apportionment are, again, indirect rather than direct.

onclusion

The evidence on the im

emains both inconsistent and

hile the "conventional wisdom

ngs, tends to support the pos

difference, more recent res

ith findings that apportionm

ariables in accounting for p

nconsistency is at least par

ical imprecision of the latt

f apportionment and the dim

ated, the nature of that re

a context of actual change,

egression techniques can c

ome of the issues existing

Conclusion

The evidence on the impact of apportionment on state policy remains both inconsistent and inconclusive, despite extensive research. While the "conventional wisdom," based primarily on case study findings, tends to support the position that apportionment systems do make a difference, more recent research has challenged this interpretation with findings that apportionment is much less important than other variables in accounting for policies in all the American states. The inconsistency is at least partially due to the conceptual and theoretical imprecision of the latter studies. By specifying the dimensions of apportionment and the dimensions of policy most likely to be related, the nature of that relationship, and then testing the model in a context of actual change, research using aggregate data and correlation-regression techniques can combine the best of both approaches and address some of the issues existing studies have left unresolved.

[1]David Derge, "Metrop
and Missouri Legislative Dele
Review, Vol. LIII (December 1

[2]Thomas A. Flinn, "Ur
ature," in Charles Press and

[3]Howard D. Hamilton,
lative Reapportionment in In
Notre Dame Law Review, Vol.
an, "The Urban-Rural Confli
Vol. XIV (June 1961): R. W
Mcrsma, "Correlates of Legi
esentatives," Midwest Jour
384-396.

[4]Wayne Francis, Leg
Comparative Analysis (Chica

[5]Hugh L. LeBlanc,
uency Factors," Midwest J
(February 1969).

[6]John C. Wahlke,
Legislative Behavior (

[7]Julius Turner, P
Baltimore: The John Hop
Schneier, Jr.).

[8]Malcolm Jewell,
New York: Random House

CHAPTER ONE

Notes

[1]David Derge, "Metropolitan and Outstate Alignments in Illinois and Missouri Legislative Delegations," American Political Science Review, Vol. LIII (December 1958), 1065.

[2]Thomas A. Flinn, "Urban-Rural Factionalism in the Ohio Legislature," in Charles Press and Charles A. Adrian, op. cit., p. 366.

[3]Howard D. Hamilton, J. E. Beardsley, and C. C. Coats, "Legislative Reapportionment in Indiana: Some Observations and a Suggestion," Notre Dame Law Review, Vol. XXXV (May 1960), 368-404; Robert S. Friedman, "The Urban-Rural Conflict Revisited," Western Political Quarterly, Vol. XIV (June 1961): R. W. Becker, F. E. Foote, M. Lubega, and S. V. Monsma, "Correlates of Legislative Voting: The Michigan House of Representatives," Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. VI (1962), 384-396.

[4]Wayne Francis, Legislative Issues in the Fifty States: A Comparative Analysis (Chicago: Rand McNally, 1967).

[5]Hugh L. LeBlanc, "Voting in State Senates: Party and Constituency Factors," Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XIII (February 1969).

[6]John C. Wahlke, et al., The Legislative System: Explorations in Legislative Behavior (Glencoe, Ill.: Free Press, 1962).

[7]Julius Turner, Party and Constituency: Pressures on Congress (Baltimore: The John Hopkins Press, 1971. Revised Edition by Edward V. Schneier, Jr.).

[8]Malcolm Jewell, The State Legislature: Politics and Practice (New York: Random House, 1969), p. 21.

[9]The two initial studie
and James A. Robinson, "Inter-P
and Welfare Policies in the Ame
Vol. XXIII, No. 2 (May 1963), 2
quences of Malapportionment:
Vol. XLIII (December 1964), 25

[10]Thomas R. Dye, Politi
Outcomes in the American State

[11]_____, "Malapport
Journal of Politics, Vol. XXV

[12]Ira Sharkansky and R
State Politics, Economics and
ence Review, Vol. LXIII (Sept

[13]Brian R. Fry and Ri
tribution," American Politic
1970), 521.

[14]Malcolm Jewell, "T
ed.), State Legislatures i
Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 196

[15]Thomas Page, Legis
Kansas: Bureau of Governme
p. 149.

[16]Nicholas H. Maste
State Politics and the Pub
1964), p. 28.

[17]See in particula
and Outstate Legislative
terview; and William C. Ha
Representation: Rural-Ur
Baton Rouge: Louisiana

[18]Page, op. cit.,

[19]Herbert Jacob a
Power: An Assessment o
tics," Journal of Polit

[9]The two initial studies of this type were Richard E. Dawson and James A. Robinson, "Inter-Party Competition, Economic Variables and Welfare Policies in the American States," Journal of Politics, Vol. XXIII, No. 2 (May 1963), 265-289; and Herbert Jacob, "The Consequences of Malapportionment: A Note of Caution," Social Forces, Vol. XLIII (December 1964), 256-261.

[10]Thomas R. Dye, Politics, Economics, and the Public: Policy Outcomes in the American States (Chicago: Rand McNally, 1966).

[11]_____, "Malapportionment and Public Policy in the States," Journal of Politics, Vol. XXVII (February 1965), 586.

[12]Ira Sharkansky and Richard I. Hofferbert, "Dimensions of State Politics, Economics and Public Policy," American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIII (September 1969), 878.

[13]Brian R. Fry and Richard F. Winters, "The Politics of Redistribution," American Political Science Review, Vol. LXII, No. 2 (June 1970), 521.

[14]Malcolm Jewell, "The Political Setting," in Alexander Heard (ed.), State Legislatures in American Politics (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1966), p. 72.

[15]Thomas Page, Legislative Apportionment in Kansas (Lawrence, Kansas: Bureau of Government Research, University of Kansas, 1952), p. 149.

[16]Nicholas H. Masters, Robert H. Salisbury, Thomas H. Eliot, State Politics and the Public Schools (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1964), p. 28.

[17]See in particular Richard T. Frost, "On Derge's Metropolitan and Outstate Legislative Delegations," American Political Science Review; and William C. Havard and Loren P. Beth, The Politics of Misrepresentation: Rural-Urban Conflict in the Florida Legislature (Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1962).

[18]Page, op. cit., p. 104.

[19]Herbert Jacob and Michael Lipsky, "Outputs, Structure, and Power: An Assessment of Changes in the Study of State and Local Politics," Journal of Politics, Vol. XXX (May 1968), 515.

[20]Robert H. Salisbury, "
[Theories and Roles," in Aus
[Policy] (Chicago: Markha

[21]Ibid.

[22]Advisory Commission o
[of State Legislatures] (Wa

[23]Press and Adrian, op

[24]Jewell, 1966, op. ci

[25]David Brady and Doug
[Transaction], Vol. IV (March

[26]A major proponent o
[Municipal League]. Its argum
[Apportionment] can be found i
[n Legislative Apportionment]
[1963]); [Reapportionment: A]
[by the National Municipal L]
[position was taken by the C]
[some of its positions on th]
[ed.), Legislative Apportio]
[ew, 1964]). A more scholar
[Robert G. Dixon, Jr., Democ]
[Law and Politics] (New York

[27]H. George Frederi
[ionment and Public Policy]
[for delivery at the Sixty-]
[cal Science Association,]
[September 8-12, 1970, p.

[28]Malcolm E. Jewel
[Process in the United Sta]

[29]Herbert Jacob,
[of Caution," Social Forc]

[30]Ira Sharkansky,
[Case of the Georgia Legi]
[(June 1970), 129-137.]

[20]Robert H. Salisbury, "The Analysis of Public Policy: A Search for Theories and Roles," in Austin Ranney (ed.), Political Science and Public Policy (Chicago: Markham, 1968), p. 158.

[21]Ibid.

[22]Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations, Apportionment of State Legislatures (Washington, D.C.: ACIR, 1962), p. 28.

[23]Press and Adrian, op. cit., p. 365.

[24]Jewell, 1966, op. cit., p. 73.

[25]David Brady and Douglas Edmonds, "One Man, One Vote--So What?," Transaction, Vol. IV (March 1967), 43.

[26]A major proponent of reapportionment has been the National Municipal League. Its arguments and documentation of the case for reapportionment can be found in the following publications: Compendium on Legislative Apportionment (1962); Reapportionment: A Year in Review (1963); Reapportionment: A Second Year in Review (1964); all published by the National Municipal League, New York. The anti-reapportionment position was taken by the Council of State Governments. Excerpts of some of its positions on the issue can be found in Howard D. Hamilton (ed.), Legislative Apportionment: Key to Power (New York: Harper and Row, 1964). A more scholarly, comprehensive treatment of the issue is Robert G. Dixon, Jr., Democratic Representation: Reapportionment in Law and Politics (New York: Oxford University Press, 1968).

[27]H. George Frederickson and Yong Hyo Cho, "Legislative Apportionment and Public Policy in the American States," a paper prepared for delivery at the Sixty-Sixth Annual Meeting of the American Political Science Association, Biltmore Hotel, Los Angeles, California, September 8-12, 1970, p. 1.

[28]Malcolm E. Jewell and Samuel C. Patterson, The Legislative Process in the United States (New York: Random House, 1966), p. 66.

[29]Herbert Jacob, "The Consequences of Malapportionment: A Note of Caution," Social Forces, Vol. XLIII (December 1964), 256-261.

[30]Ira Sharkansky, "Reapportionment and Roll Call Voting: The Case of the Georgia Legislature," Social Science Quarterly, Vol. LI (June 1970), 129-137.

[31]Brett W. Hawkins, "Co
Richard I. Hofferbert and I
Politics: Readings in Compara
Brown, 1971), p. 297.

[32]Frederickson and Cho,
that in a subsequent draft of
from the text. When asked wh
said that a re-analysis of th
portionment on state aid to e
ginally been thought. This r
gression model that was use
ge data for several of the
sed in this research, all s
should be treated cautiously

[31]Brett W. Hawkins, "Consequences of Reapportionment in Georgia," in Richard I. Hofferbert and Ira Sharkansky (eds.), State and Urban Politics: Readings in Comparative Public Policy (Boston: Little Brown, 1971), p. 297.

[32]Frederickson and Cho, op. cit., p. 44. It should be noted that in a subsequent draft of the same paper, this passage was deleted from the text. When asked why in a phone conversation, Frederickson said that a re-analysis of the data had shown that the impact of reapportionment on state aid to education was not as strong as had originally been thought. This revision, plus the omnibus nature of the regression model that was used, plus some errors that were found in the data for several of the variables in their study that were also used in this research, all suggest that their initial conclusions should be treated cautiously.

THE T

Research on state poli

ange of perspectives and met

iscussed in the last chapter

n a more theoretical context

xamining the influence of a

lternative Approaches to tate Politics Research

Research on state p

ifferent from, that focusi

olicy-making research is

ocial-psychological or th

ome aspect of the politic

sing the social-psycholog

role orientations and beha

related such predisposit

utcomes.[2] Those employ

behavior have often used

examining it with such v

theory, and regression e

CHAPTER II

THE THEORETICAL CONTEXT

Research on state policy and policy making includes a diverse range of perspectives and methods, many of which have been reviewed and discussed in the last chapter. This chapter will place these findings in a more theoretical context and present an alternative model for examining the influence of apportionment systems on state policy.

Alternative Approaches to State Politics Research

Research on state policy making is related to, yet also very different from, that focusing on the determinants of state policy. Policy-making research is behaviorally oriented, using either the social-psychological or the rational-calculus perspective to explain some aspect of the political, usually legislative, process.[1] Studies using the social-psychological approach have dealt primarily with the role orientations and behavioral cues of legislators, but have not related such predispositions either to actual behavior or to policy outcomes.[2] Those employing a form of rational-calculus to explain behavior have often used roll call votes as the dependent variable, examining it with such varied techniques as cluster analysis, axiomatic theory, and regression equations.[3]

Roll call analysis, alt

ther approaches to legislativ

tions. First, as was noted ea

oting as an expression of ind

since in many cases a variety

or bargains and compromises

ote itself a formality of on

oting is "explained," as in

ations and assumptions are

lained (majority party cohe

pecified range of issues, i

elatively narrow range of

alue in predicting or inte

ontexts. Third, roll call

and policy outcomes. Final

that variation in the dete

issues are either complete

ther roll call studies th

n one or several legisla

distinguished only by gen

rticle which found that

ariables and voting on

ariables.[5]

In sum, social-p

the attitudes and role

Roll call analysis, although more theoretically advanced than other approaches to legislative research, has several clear limitations. First, as was noted earlier, the significance of roll call voting as an expression of individual policy preference is unclear, since in many cases a variety of sub-issues which serve as the basis for bargains and compromises are subsumed within a vote, making the vote itself a formality of only secondary importance. Second, where voting is "explained," as in the Meltz axiomatic model,[4] the qualifications and assumptions are so numerous that the phenomena being explained (majority party cohesion on contested roll calls, over an unspecified range of issues, in a limited number of states) represent a relatively narrow range of legislative behavior and are of questionable value in predicting or interpreting legislative behavior in specific contexts. Third, roll call analysis provides no linkage between voting and policy outcomes. Finally, it aggregates roll calls in such a way that variation in the determinants of voting across different types of issues are either completely obscured (as in the Meltz, Derge, and other roll call studies that lump together all "contested" roll calls in one or several legislatures over a given period of time) or are distinguished only by general categories (as in the Clausen and Cheney article which found that voting on economic issues was related to party variables and voting on welfare issues was related to constituency variables.[5]

In sum, social-psychological studies contain insights as to the attitudes and role orientations of legislators, but relate these

either to structure nor polic

studies as a group are the mo

phenomena they explain are co

specify the relationship betw

the theoretical linkage betwe

policy may be established.

theories must suffice. Rese

and policy has as much inher

with the policy-making proce

ships and the measures used

The problem with such resea

conceptualized the relation

degree of precision.

Legislative Structure and Public Policy

The structure of s

Regression policy studies

summary measures such as

the houses of the legisla

districts, degree of legi

lative "conflict," and t

these measures are then

subsumed under the headi

ious policy measures.

the policies they are b

neither to structure nor policy, nor provide any theory. Roll call studies as a group are the most theoretically advanced, but the phenomena they explain are conceptually undifferentiated and fail to specify the relationship between roll calls and policy. Ultimately, the theoretical linkage between legislative structure, process and policy may be established. Until that time, partial, incomplete theories must suffice. Research on the relationship between structure and policy has as much inherent validity at present as that dealing with the policy-making process, so long as the hypothesized relationships and the measures used to test them are theoretically informed. The problem with such research to date is that it generally has not conceptualized the relationship between structure and policy with any degree of precision.

Legislative Structure and Public Policy

The structure of state political systems in correlation-regression policy studies has for the most part been represented by summary measures such as the frequency of turnover in party control of the houses of the legislature, variation in the size of legislative districts, degree of legislative "professionalization," level of legislative "conflict," and the formal powers of the governor. A number of these measures are then more or less arbitrarily brought together and subsumed under the heading "political system" and correlated with various policy measures. Since they are not related to each other or to the policies they are being correlated with in any systematic fashion,

owever, the only basis for eva

of the correlations. Where no

made at the outset about the n

variables, statistically signi

nning.

The Schlesinger index

ample of an independent var

theoretical context for a

that context and applied to

as no logical relationship.

ulted for not controlling

research that has indiscrim

easures of state political

andomly associating large

heoretical basis for assu

The indiscriminate

ion creates the additional

orrelations among indepen

orrelation coefficients

igh $P(H_0)$).

Another problem w

s its static, cross-sect

uggests that policy mak

onstraints that permit

ear to year.[7] The inte

influence it become so

however, the only basis for evaluating the findings is the significance of the correlations. Where no assumptions or hypotheses have been made at the outset about the nature of the relationships among the variables, statistically significant correlations have no theoretical meaning.

The Schlesinger index of formal powers of the governor is an example of an independent variable initially developed and tested in a theoretical context for a specific purpose, and then taken out of that context and applied to a variety of policy variables to which it has no logical relationship.[6] The Schlesinger study can validly be faulted for not controlling for other variables, but the subsequent research that has indiscriminately used the index and other summary measures of state political systems is guilty of the greater error of randomly associating large numbers of variables without having any theoretical basis for assuming a relationship in the first place.

The indiscriminate use of independent variables in this fashion creates the additional problem of multicollinearity, or high correlations among independent variables that make the regression and correlation coefficients highly unreliable (large confidence intervals, high $P(H_0)$).

Another problem with the correlation-regression policy research is its static, cross-sectional design. The theory of incrementalism suggests that policy making occurs in a matrix of formal and informal constraints that permit only a limited amount of change to occur from year to year.[7] The interaction between policy and the factors that influence it become so complex during periods of incremental change

that it is difficult to analy

of the relationships. By mea

policy variables cross-sectio

mulative interaction betwee

the period preceding the anal

Finally, the policy m

tudies are usually expenditu

asis of expediency more tha

system they are most likely

hazard correlations that are

interpretation.

Malapportionment and Policy

These conceptual and

t least some of the inconsi

that malapportionment has no

findings that it does. The

ore of three indexes of ma

Gray, and Schubert-Press.

ate score for each state.

ed computational technique

degree of variation in the

Eisenberg Index of malappor

erage population of a sin

mparing the population of

encies, the "value" of a

that it is difficult to analytically sort out the nature and direction of the relationships. By measuring the linkage between structure and policy variables cross-sectionally, no control is possible over the cumulative interaction between independent and dependent variables in the period preceding the analysis.

Finally, the policy measures used in correlation-regression studies are usually expenditure levels, once again selected on the basis of expediency more than for the characteristics of the political system they are most likely to reflect. The result is the same; haphazard correlations that are made "theoretical" through post hoc interpretation.

Malapportionment and Policy

These conceptual and methodological shortcomings account for at least some of the inconsistency between the policy study findings that malapportionment has no impact on state policy, and the case study findings that it does. The policy studies have invariably used one or more of three indexes of malapportionment: the David-Eisenberg, Dauer-Kelsay, and Schubert-Press. Each index provides a summary malapportionment score for each state. Although different in conceptual emphasis and computational technique, all three are based essentially on the degree of variation in the size of legislative districts. The David-Eisenberg Index of malapportionment is calculated by computing the average population of a single member district in each state and then comparing the population of actual constituencies with average constituencies, the "value" of a vote representing the ratio of an actual

constituency to an average co

a vote in the largest categor

each house and then the meas

Dauer-Kelsay Index measures

state's population that can

Schubert-Press Index combine

the distribution of districe

kurtosis in this distributi

each state.[8]

Variation in distri

of the structure of repres

ance of malapportionment

rural legislators dispropo

of the legislature, and th

of present measures of ma

state policy may be relat

direct measures of legisl

The level of mala

gradual accumulation ove

legislatures. For reaso

structural and policy ch

influence of malapportic

hand, represents a signi

in the course of five y

was altered to conform

states this meant a sig

constituency to an average constituency in each state. The "value" of a vote in the largest category of county in each state is computed for each house and then the measures for both houses are averaged. The Dauer-Kelsay Index measures the theoretical minimum percentage of a state's population that can elect a majority of each house. The Schubert-Press Index combines inverted coefficients of variation in the distribution of district populations with measures of skewness and kurtosis in this distribution to produce an "apportionment score" for each state.[8]

Variation in district size is at best only an indirect measure of the structure of representation in the legislature. The significance of malapportionment from a policy standpoint was that it gave rural legislators disproportionate power in the decision-making bodies of the legislature, and therefore control over policy. The inability of present measures of malapportionment to account for variation in state policy may be related to their emphasis on indirect rather than direct measures of legislative power.

The level of malapportionment in states in 1962 represented the gradual accumulation over many years of disproportionate rural power in legislatures. For reasons noted above, the incremental nature of both structural and policy change during this period obscures the specific influence of malapportionment on policy. Reapportionment, on the other hand, represents a significant disruption of the incremental chain. In the course of five years, the demographic structure of legislatures was altered to conform to the "one man, one vote" principle. In most states this meant a significant increase in metropolitan representation,

and in some, a major shift in

extent that rural-oriented po

of legislatures, and to the

legislative power to metropo

certain types of policies.

provide a more valid basis

systems on state policy tha

In sum, although th

ical systems have a signifi

to state policy making and

failed to adequately conce

tionships they have examin

misleading conclusions.

is not significantly rela

that reapportionment is u

any final conclusions are

additional research is n

tionment systems and of

lated, and then tests th

An Alternative Model

The structure o

constraint that shapes

necessary but insuffic

coalition to form, and

or constituency relate

and in some, a major shift in the legislative power structure. To the extent that rural-oriented policies are the result of rural domination of legislatures, and to the extent that reapportionment has shifted legislative power to metropolitan areas, changes can be expected in certain types of policies. Reapportionment would therefore seem to provide a more valid basis for examining the influence of apportionment systems on state policy than malapportionment.

In sum, although the structural characteristics of state political systems have a significant and theoretically valid relationship to state policy making and policy outputs, recent policy studies have failed to adequately conceptualize the structural variables and relationships they have examined, resulting in premature and potentially misleading conclusions. One such conclusion is that malapportionment is not significantly related to state policy, the implication being that reapportionment is unlikely to produce much policy change. Before any final conclusions are drawn as to the impact of reapportionment, additional research is needed that specifies the dimensions of apportionment systems and of state policy that are most likely to be related, and then tests them in a context of actual change.

An Alternative Model

The structure of the legislature can be seen as a framework or constraint that shapes the legislative process. It represents the necessary but insufficient prerequisite for a demographic or partisan coalition to form, and as such, influences the probability of party or constituency related policies being adopted.

State policy outcomes

tion of power in a legislatur

power is of both a formal an

largely intangible and invol

'political currency."[9] Form

in the vote. The ultimate t

group or interest is its aa

legislation.

Legislative votes c

dimensions are more stable

inherent in the legislatur

cter of state policy are

Although party is the best

influence varies under di

mographic structure, or

to be less important than

those states and on those

the rural minority to be

Studies of the c

the partisan and demogra

here as the potential vo

blocs of legislators, a

policy. While the unde

ships have yet to be te

structure is more likel

State policy outcomes are largely determined by the configuration of power in a legislature at a given point in time. Legislative power is of both a formal and informal nature. Informal power is largely intangible and involves the exchange of what Coleman calls "political currency."[9] Formal power, in contrast, inheres primarily in the vote. The ultimate test of the legislative power of a given group or interest is its aability to muster sufficient votes to enact legislation.

Legislative votes cluster along a variety of dimensions. Some dimensions are more stable than others. Two that are structurally inherent in the legislature and exert an ongoing influence on the character of state policy are the partisan and the demographic dimensions. Although party is the best single predictor of legislative voting, its influence varies under different conditions and across issues.[10] The demographic structure, or rural-urban cleavage, is generally considered to be less important than party, but its influence is significant in those states and on those issues where malapportionment has permitted the rural minority to benefit at the expense of the urban majority.

Studies of the correlation of legislative voting suggest that the partisan and demographic structures of state legislatures, defined here as the potential voting power of partisan and/or demographic-based blocs of legislators, are directly related to specific types of state policy. While the underlying conceptual dimensions of these relationships have yet to be tested, it would seem plausible that party structure is more likely to influence conflictual, ideologically-based

issues which relate to the ap

ernment in regulating individ

and benefits among the popula

would be considered "regulat

Demographic structur

dealing not so much with whe

itself in a given area, but

resource is to be allocated

conform to the "distributiv

ably the best examples of

various forms of state aid

state aid formulae is well

Reapportionment and State Aid to Education

Just as apportion

aid more than other types

aid more clearly "politi

ject to variations in le

grants to local communit

a strict per capita basi

tampering. Various typ

values and priorities o

specify how the aid mor

categorical aid that ha

of the legislatures is

issues which relate to the appropriate role and responsibility of government in regulating individual behavior and in apportioning burdens and benefits among the population. Using the Lowi typology, these would be considered "regulative" and "redistributive" types of issues.

Demographic structure is most likely to influence policies dealing not so much with whether or how much the state should involve itself in a given area, but rather, how an already established policy resource is to be allocated among competing interests. Such policies conform to the "distributive" dimension of the Lowi typology. Probably the best examples of distributive types of state policies are various forms of state aid. The influence of malapportionment on state aid formulae is well documented and was discussed in Chapter I.

Reapportionment and State Aid to Education

Just as apportionment systems are likely to influence state aid more than other types of policy, so also are some types of state aid more clearly "political" in their content, and therefore more subject to variations in legislative power, than others. General purpose grants to local communities, for example, are usually distributed on a strict per capita basis, making them relatively immune to legislative tampering. Various types of categorical grants, however, reflect the values and priorities of the dominant power bloc in the legislature and specify how the aid monies are to be distributed. A major type of categorical aid that has traditionally reflected the rural domination of the legislatures is state aid to education.

Formal responsibility

rate states under the implie

the Constitution. The federa

involved in educational poli

ased. Even with the signifi

entary and Secondary Educat

tal elementary-secondary

only eight percent in 1967-

seven percent for 1970-71.[1]

A strong tradition

country has meant that sta

in educational finance and

those functions and powers

willing to perform themsel

ar, however, growing dis

educational costs have pr

greater share of the resp

In 1968-69, they contrib

for public elementary an

this ranged from a high

ent in New Hampshire.[12]

State support p

plexity since their beg

public education totall

second only to national

billion in total state

Formal responsibility for public education rests with the separate states under the implied powers clause of the Tenth Amendment to the Constitution. The federal government has traditionally become involved in educational policy making only in times of clear national need. Even with the significant increases in aid related to the Elementary and Secondary Education Act of 1965, the federal portion of total elementary-secondary educational expenditures reached a peak of only eight percent in 1967-68 and has since dropped back to less than seven percent for 1970-71.[11]

A strong tradition of Jeffersonian localism in much of the country has meant that states as a group have had a subordinate role in educational finance and administration and have tended to assume those functions and powers that local communities were unable or unwilling to perform themselves. Particularly since the Second World War, however, growing disparities in local resources and rapidly rising educational costs have provided the impetus for states to assume a greater share of the responsibility for financing public education. In 1968-69, they contributed an average of 39.9 percent of expenditures for public elementary and secondary schools. As shown in Table II-1, this ranged from a high of 85.1 percent in Hawaii to a low of 9.3 percent in New Hampshire.[12]

State support programs have grown in both magnitude and complexity since their beginnings in the 1930's.[13] Expenditures for public education totalled over $28 billion in 1966-67, ranking it second only to national defense in policy priorities. Of the $19.1 billion in total state aid to local governments during the same year,

	STATE PERCENT OF
1. Hawaii	85
2. Delaware	71
3. North Carolina	65
4. Georgia	5
New Mexico	5
6. Washington	5
7. South Carolina	5
8. Alabama	5
9. Louisiana	
10. Florida	
11. Kentucky	
12. Mississippi	
13. Utah	
14. New York	
15. Tennessee	
16. Texas	
17. Arizona	
18. Minnesota	
19. Arkansas	
20. West Virginia	
21. Michigan	
22. Pennsylvania	
23. Alaska	
United States	

Table II-1

STATE PERCENT OF PUBLIC SCHOOL EXPENDITURES, 1969

1.	Hawaii	85.1%	24.	Idaho	39.8
2.	Delaware	71.4	25.	Oklahoma	38.6
3.	North Carolina	65.2	26.	Maryland	37.3
4.	Georgia	59.7	27.	Virginia	37.0
	New Mexico	59.7	28.	Nevada	35.4
6.	Washington	59.4	29.	Maine	34.7
7.	South Carolina	59.3	30.	Indiana	34.0
8.	Alabama	59.0	31.	California	33.9
9.	Louisiana	57.8	32.	Rhode Island	32.9
10.	Florida	56.7	33.	Missouri	32.7
11.	Kentucky	52.6	34.	Iowa	32.6
12.	Mississippi	51.6	35.	Connecticut	31.3
13.	Utah	50.1	36.	Ohio	29.5
14.	New York	48.4	37.	Vermont	28.6
15.	Tennessee	47.6	38.	Montana	27.6
16.	Texas	47.1	39.	New Jersey	27.3
17.	Arizona	46.8	40.	Kansas	27.1
18.	Minnesota	46.1	41.	Illinois	26.6
19.	Arkansas	45.0	42.	North Dakota	26.2
20.	West Virginia	44.7	43.	Wisconsin	25.2
21.	Michigan	44.4	44.	Colorado	24.0
22.	Pennsylvania	43.7	45.	Wyoming	20.6
23.	Alaska	40.7	46.	Massachusetts	18.9
			47.	Oregon	17.7
			48.	Nebraska	16.0
			49.	South Dakota	11.4
	United States	39.9	50.	New Hampshire	9.3

$11.6 billion, or 62 percent,
tion. Public welfare, the se
ccounted for only 15.2 perc

The formulae by whic
highly complex and understoo
finance experts in each sta
through four basic types of
pose and special purpose.
each category determines th
benefits to local districts
educational program depend
funds contributed by the s

Although the trend
and greater equalization
have been slow, uneven, a
most states. Resistance
realities of the apportio
the equalization princip
formula acceptable to a
1969 study of state aid
Relations noted some of

> There are . . . man
> goal of equalizatio
> State aid may occu
> equalization relate
> total State funds
> State aid may equa
> pact on local serv
> this purpose are s
> education aid may

$11.6 billion, or 62 percent, was for elementary and secondary education. Public welfare, the second largest category of state aid, accounted for only 15.2 percent by comparison.[14]

The formulae by which state aid funds are distributed are highly complex and understood in detail by only a few educational finance experts in each state. Generally, funds are distributed through four basic types of grants: flat, equalizing, general purpose and special purpose. The proportion of total aid allocated to each category determines the program priorities and the patterns of benefits to local districts. The impact of state aid on the overall educational program depends upon the proportion of total educational funds contributed by the state.[15]

Although the trend has been toward greater state responsibility and greater equalization in the distribution of state aid, such changes have been slow, uneven, and have met with considerable resistance in most states. Resistance to equalization is based on the political realities of the apportionment process. A number of concessions to the equalization principle have to be made in order to make the aid formula acceptable to a majority of legislators in each house. In a 1969 study of state aid, the Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations noted some of the ways this can occur:

> There are . . . many points where slippage between the goal of equalization and the actual distribution of State aid may occur. In some states, for example, equalization relates to a relatively small portion of total State funds provided. . . . While a portion of State aid may equalize, it may have only a slight impact on local service levels if the total funds for this purpose are small, while the totality of State education aid may, in fact, work against equalization.

Even where equalizat
a large portion of State
formulas may be based on
with additional measures
factors may, in fact, tu
zation.[16]

Legislators are awa
schools in their district.
Education sends each legisl
figures. Interviews with a
tion officials, and member
constituency benefits are
for the aid package.[17] Ro
tically:

> Legislators view--or a
> not so much as a means
> ities than as an inst
> money for their own c
> tion of cutting the b
> for one's home distri
> educational opportuni
> state. Thus, the gre
> priations has always
> equalization but to
> school districts thro

To the extent th
interpretation are valid
the relative power of di
lature. The relationsh
legislature and rural fa
evidence, although inco

Reapportionment
most state legislatures

> Even where equalization governs the distribution of a large portion of State education assistance, such formulas may be based only in part on local ability, with additional measures also used. These additional factors may, in fact, turn out to work against equalization.[16]

Legislators are aware of the amount of aid allocated to the schools in their district. In Michigan, the State Department of Education sends each legislator a quarterly statement listing these figures. Interviews with a number of lobbyists, department of education officials, and members of the governor's staff also suggest that constituency benefits are a major determinant of legislator support for the aid package.[17] Roger A. Freeman states the case more emphatically:

> Legislators view--or are expected to view--state aid not so much as a means of helping low-income communities than as an instrument of getting the most state money for their own constituency. This is a proposition of cutting the biggest possible slice of the pie for one's home district, rather than of improving educational opportunities in other sections of the state. Thus, the greater part of state school appropriations has always been used not for the purpose of equalization but to channel state funds back to local school districts throughout the state.[18]

To the extent that the Michigan interviews and the Freeman interpretation are valid, the distribution of state aid should reflect the relative power of different types of constituencies in the legislature. The relationship between rural over-representation in the legislature and rural favoritism in state aid has been discussed. The evidence, although inconsistent, supports such a relationship.

Reapportionment has increased metropolitan representation in most state legislatures. In some, the metropolitan delegation has

remained a minority, in othe

from a minority to a majorit

bution of state aid is relat

each of these types of chan

the distribution of state a

of demographically-based le

impact of reapportionment

the Study

The purpose of the

increased voting power of

ictures resulting from rea

distribution of state aid

of metropolitan legislati

of the metropolitan delec

examine the relationship

policy both longitudinal

the distribution of stat

effects of metropolitan

reapportionment. The fo

Hypotheses

The central ass

tionship between the d

legislatures, and the

fore,

remained a minority, in others a majority, and in others it has moved from a minority to a majority status. To the extent that the distribution of state aid is related to constituency-based voting blocs, each of these types of change should produce predictable changes in the distribution of state aid. This study will develop the concept of demographically-based legislative coalitions in explaining the impact of reapportionment on the distribution of state aid.

The Study

The purpose of the study is to examine the extent to which the increased voting power of the metropolitan delegations in state legislatures resulting from reapportionment has produced a more favorable distribution of state aid to metropolitan school districts. A measure of metropolitan legislative power based on the proportional strength of the metropolitan delegation in state legislatures will be used to examine the relationship between legislative structure and educational policy both longitudinally, showing the effects of reapportionment on the distribution of state aid, and cross-sectionally, showing the effects of metropolitan legislative power on state aid patterns after reapportionment. The following hypotheses will be tested.

Hypotheses

The central assumption of the study is that there is a relationship between the demographic structure of representation in state legislatures, and the distribution of state aid to education. Therefore,

H_1: The relat
school di
of state
the votir
delegatic

H_2: Changes
metropol
1962 and
the type
politan
tionment

In the present stu

aid to education depends u
power and the cohesiveness
ences between central city
crease as the size and soc
suburbs increases. There

H_3: The gr
of met
greate
polita
relat
distr
aid.

An alternative e
formula for its distribu
that such expenditures
and demographic charact
balance or decision-mak
educational problems a
socio-economic charact
such as income, educat
useful, indicators of

H_1: The relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid is directly related to the voting power of the metropolitan delegation in the state legislature.

H_2: Changes in the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts between 1962 and 1969 are directly related to the type and amount of change in metropolitan power resulting from reapportionment between 1962 and 1967.

In the present study, the impact of reapportionment on state aid to education depends upon both the amount of change in metropolitan power and the cohesiveness of the metropolitan delegation. Differences between central city and suburban legislators are likely to increase as the size and socio-economic differential between cities and suburbs increases. Therefore,

H_3: The greater the demographic homogeneity of metropolitan constituencies, the greater the cohesiveness of the metropolitan delegation, and the greater the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid.

An alternative explanation for the level of state aid and the formula for its distribution is the so-called "cybernetic" argument that such expenditures are more a reflection of the socio-economic and demographic characteristics of states than of their political power balance or decision-making processes. Metropolitan areas have distinct educational problems and needs. A general indication of need is the socio-economic characteristics of the metropolitan areas. Factors such as income, education, and racial composition are indirect, yet useful, indicators of metropolitan educational need. According to the

'ybernetic" argument, these

the amount and proportion of

school districts. The follo

H_4: The leve
and the
itan sch
of state
socio-ec
politan

One of the central

ompetition promotes progr

hat organized opposition

rease welfare and other t

aintain political power.

e directly related to th

larly, electoral partici

sponsiveness of policy ma

welfare-oriented expendit

nd Robinson, Dye, and o

he party competition mo

he persuasiveness of th

require that the relatio

e examined. The follo

H_5: The
and
itan
tion
to t
stat

"cybernetic" argument, these factors are an important determinant of the amount and proportion of state aid distributed to metropolitan school districts. The following hypothesis will therefore be tested:

H_4: The level of metropolitan per pupil aid and the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid are directly related to the socio-economic characteristics of metropolitan populations.

One of the central tenets of political science is that party competition promotes progressive, liberal policies. The argument is that organized opposition creates incentives for policy makers to increase welfare and other types of benefits in order to acquire or maintain political power. It follows that party competition should be directly related to the amount and distribution of state aid. Similarly, electoral participation is also thought to increase the responsiveness of policy makers to public pressure for increases in welfare-oriented expenditures. Despite the recent findings of Dawson and Robinson, Dye, and others that cast some doubt on the validity of the party competition model, the inconsistency of these findings and the persuasiveness of the theory in the state politics literature require that the relationship between party competition and state aid be examined. The following hypotheses will therefore be tested:

H_5: The level of metropolitan per pupil aid and the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid are directly related to the level of party competition in states.

H_6: The level
and the
itan sch
tion of
to the l
in state

Since the study ass

ally "political" in nature

variables and the state ai

relationship between the s

measures. Therefore,

H_7: The le
and th
itan s
tion o
party
cipati
econom
polita

A second assumpt

composition of the legis

level and distribution o

Therefore,

H_8: The
and
itan
tion
metr
part

A final assump

measure based on metro

direct measure based o

in explaining state po

H_6: The level of metropolitan per pupil aid and the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid are directly related to the level of electoral participation in states.

Since the study assumes that the state aid formula is basically "political" in nature, the relationship between the political variables and the state aid measures should be stronger than the relationship between the socio-economic variables and the state aid measures. Therefore,

H_7: The level of metropolitan per pupil aid and the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid are more related to party competition and electoral participation than they are to the socio-economic characteristics of the metropolitan population.

A second assumption of the study is that the demographic composition of the legislature is a more important determinant of the level and distribution of metropolitan aid than party competition. Therefore,

H_8: The level of metropolitan per pupil aid and the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid are more related to metropolitan legislative power than to party competition.

A final assumption of the study is that a direct apportionment measure based on metropolitan legislative power is superior to an indirect measure based on variation in the size of legislative districts in explaining state policy choices. Therefore,

H_9: The metro
measure
tionment
patterns

Variables and Research Proc

The central concept
power, power being defined
measure of metropolitan po
proportion of legislators
tan counties, plus the pr
representing metropolitan
accounts for differences
houses of the same legisl
that both houses have rou
the state aid formula.
for forty-three states f
in state legislative mar
legislative power result
in the basic power meas
discussed in Chapters T

The major deper
education. Three spec
1) total per pupil aid
divided by the number
2) metropolitan per p
districts in metropol

H_9: The metropolitan legislative power measure is superior to other apportionment measures in explaining patterns of state aid to education.

Variables and Research Procedures

The central concept of the study is metropolitan legislative power, power being defined as potential voting strength. The basic measure of metropolitan power (PWR), the independent variable, is the proportion of legislators in the lower house representing metropolitan counties, plus the proportion of legislators in the upper house representing metropolitan counties, divided by two.[19] This measure accounts for differences in rural over-representation across different houses of the same legislature under malapportionment, and it assumes that both houses have roughly equal influence in the development of the state aid formula. Metropolitan legislative power was calculated for forty-three states for both 1961-62 and 1967-68 from information in state legislative manuals and bluebooks.[20] Measures of change in legislative power resulting from reapportionment and two refinements in the basic power measure for 1967-68 were also calculated. They are discussed in Chapters Three and Four.

The major dependent variable of the study is state aid to education. Three specific measures of state aid will be used: 1) total per pupil aid (PPA), or the total state aid appropriation, divided by the number of students in average daily attendance; 2) metropolitan per pupil aid (MPPA), or the PPA received by school districts in metropolitan counties; and 3) metropolitan relative

advantage (MRA), or the rat

pupil aid. These measures

portionment, and for 1968-6

legislatures had had an opp

state aid formula. Changes

reapportionment were also

correspondence with indivi

though forty-nine departme

for data, the data they fo

ferent formats, and were

provided sufficient data

The alternative e

the hypotheses will be

Socio-economic Varia

1. Personal Inc
1968.

2. Change in Pe
Personal Inc

3. Educational
for Public
Income, 196

4. 1960 Metrop
population

5. Percentage
Areas (PCT
living in

6. Large City
the 1960
100,000.

advantage (MRA), or the ratio of metropolitan to non-metropolitan per pupil aid. These measures were calculated for 1961-62, before reapportionment, and for 1968-69, at least one year after reapportioned legislatures had had an opportunity to make their will felt on the state aid formula. Changes in these measures during the period of reapportionment were also calculated. The data were obtained through correspondence with individual state departments of education. Although forty-nine departments eventually responded to the requests for data, the data they forwarded were of uneven quality, had different formats, and were often incomplete. Only twenty-six states provided sufficient data to be included in the study.[21]

The alternative explanations for state aid patterns discussed in the hypotheses will be tested with the following control variables:

Socio-economic Variables

1. Personal Income (PERSINC)--Per Capita Personal Income, 1968.

2. Change in Personal Income (CGINC)--Percent Increase in Personal Income, 1958-68.

3. Educational Tax Burden (BURDEN)--Local and State Revenue for Public Schools in 1968-69 as Percent of Personal Income, 1968.

4. 1960 Metropolitan Population (METPOP)--Size of the 1960 population living in SMSA counties (in thousands).

5. Percentage of the 1960 Population Living in Metropolitan Areas (PCTMET)--Proportion of total population in 1960 living in SMSA counties.

6. Large City Metropolitan Population (LGCTYPOP)--Size of the 1960 population living in metropolitan cities over 100,000.

7. Percent of Metr
(PCTLGCTY)--Lar
as a proportion

8. Percent of Non-
(NONWHITE)--The
population in 1

9. Percent Student
students attend

10. Change in Metr
in population,

Political Variables

11. Long-term Part
Party Competit

12. Short-term Par
tition in the

13. Long-term Ele
Index of Part

14. Short-term El
for Gubernato

15. State role in
State and Loc
state in 196

16. Apportionmen
of variation

17. Apportionmen
the state po
legislature

18. Change in I
and 1967.

19. Change in D
and 1967.

The sources fo

vance to the analysis,

will be discussed in t

7. Percent of Metropolitan Population in Large Cities (PCTLGCTY)--Large city metropolitan population in 1960 as a proportion of the total metropolitan population.

8. Percent of Non-whites in Large Metropolitan Cities (NONWHITE)--The percent of the large city metropolitan population in 1960 that was non-white.

9. Percent Students in Public Schools (PCTPUB)--Percent of students attending public schools in 1967.

10. Change in Metropolitan Population (CGPOP)--Percent change in population, 1960-69.

Political Variables

11. Long-term Party Competition (RANNEY)--Ranney Index of Party Competition.

12. Short-term Party Competition (PTYCOMP)--1967 Party Competition in the State Legislature.

13. Long-term Electoral Participation (MILBRATH)--Milbrath Index of Participation.

14. Short-term Electoral Participation (GOV)--Percent turnout for Gubernatorial election nearest to 1968.

15. State role in Educational Finance (STPCT)--Percent of State and Local Public School Revenues contributed by the state in 1969.

16. Apportionment Variable #1 (ICV)--An inverted coefficient of variation in legislative district size, 1962 and 1967.

17. Apportionment Variable #2 (DK)--The minimum percentage of the state population necessary to elect a majority of the legislature, 1962 and 1967.

18. Change in ICV (CGICV)--Percent change in ICV between 1962 and 1967.

19. Change in DK (CGDK)--Percent change in DK between 1962 and 1967.

The sources for each of these measures, their theoretical relevance to the analysis, and their relationship to the state aid measures, will be discussed in the following chapters. It should be noted that

the above measures are calc
stated. The sources for ea
a description of the deriva
ceeding chapters. Their t
their relationship to the
analysis that follows.

The research metho
descriptive statistics and
to correlation and regress
examine the extent to whi
politan power, and the rel
changes in state aid, in
easure will be refined a
the state aid measures as
tween the two sets of con
will be examined. In Cha
different sub-sets of var
ory power, will be exam
Chapter VII, the finding
the study, appropriate c
future research.

the above measures are calculated at the state level, unless otherwise stated. The sources for each of these measures, and where appropriate, a description of the derivation, are presented in footnotes in succeeding chapters. Their theoretical relevance to the analysis and their relationship to the state aid measures will be discussed in the analysis that follows.

The research methods used in the study will range from simple descriptive statistics and graphic plots of bivariate relationships, to correlation and regression techniques.[22] The study will first examine the extent to which reapportionment produced changes in metropolitan power, and the relationship between changes in power and changes in state aid, in Chapter III. In Chapter IV, the basic power measure will be refined and its increased explanatory power vis-a-vis the state aid measures assessed. In Chapter V, the relationship between the two sets of control variables and the state aid measures will be examined. In Chapter VI, the relative explanatory power of different sub-sets of variables, as well as their cumulative explanatory power, will be examined with multiple regression techniques. In Chapter VII, the findings will be related to the hypotheses guiding the study, appropriate conclusions drawn, and suggestions made for future research.

[1]A useful, succinc
social-psychological and t
in Joseph A. Schlesinger's
and the Social Sciences (N
the American Political Sci
910-911.

[2]Two major exampl
tive System (New York: J
the Lawmakers (New Haven:

[3]Cluster analysis
Grumm, "The Systematic An
Behavior," Western Polit
Axiomatic theory, outlin
and the Uses of Function
Vol. LXII, No. 2 (June 1
influence of competition
by David Meltz in an unp
A Model of the Bargainin
analysis of party and co
votes is found in Hugh
Constituency Influences
XIII (February 1969), 3

[4]Meltz, op. cit

[5]Aage R. Clausen
of Senate-House Voting
American Political Sci
252.

[6]The Index of
Schlesinger's article
and Kenneth Vines (eds
Little, Brown and Com

CHAPTER II

Notes

[1]A useful, succinct discussion of the differences between the social-psychological and the rational-calculus perspectives is found in Joseph A. Schlesinger's review of Seymour Martin Lipset, Politics and the Social Sciences (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969) in the American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIV (September 1970), 910-911.

[2]Two major examples are John C. Wahlke, et al., The Legislative System (New York: John Wiley and Son, 1965) and James Barber, The Lawmakers (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1966).

[3]Cluster analysis of roll call votes is explained in John Grumm, "The Systematic Analysis of Blocs in the Study of Legislative Behavior," Western Political Quarterly, Vol. XVIII (1965), 350-362. Axiomatic theory, outlined by A. James Gregor in "Political Science and the Uses of Functional Analysis," American Political Science Review, Vol. LXII, No. 2 (June 1968), 428-440, is applied to an analysis of the influence of competition on cohesion in majority party roll call voting by David Meltz in an unpublished monograph, "Legislative Party Cohesion: A Model of the Bargaining Process in State Legislatures." A regression analysis of party and constituency influences in state senate roll call votes is found in Hugh L. LeBlanc, "Voting in State Senates: Party and Constituency Influences," Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XIII (February 1969), 33-57.

[4]Meltz, op. cit.

[5]Aage R. Clausen and Richard B. Cheney, "A Comparative Analysis of Senate-House Voting on Economic and Welfare Policy, 1953-1964," American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIV, No. 1 (March 1970), 138-152.

[6]The Index of Formal Governor Powers originally appeared in Schlesinger's article, "The Politics of the Executive" in Herbert Jacob and Kenneth Vines (eds.), Politics and the American States (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1965).

[7] The theory of incr
was originally developed by
Wildavsky in their article,
American Political Science
529-547.

[8] See Paul T. David
Urban and Suburban Vote, V
of Virginia Bureau of Publ
and Robert G. Kelsay, "Unr
Review, Vol. XLIV (Decembe
Charles Press, "Measuring
Review, Vol. LVIII (June

[9] James S. Coleman
ence Review, Vol. LXIV, N

[10] See Julius Turne
gress (Revised Edition by
Johns Hopkins Press, 197

[11] Rankings of the
Association, 1971), p. 4

[12] Ibid., p. 45.

[13] For a good dis
nance systems, see Robe
London: MacMillan, 19

[14] Advisory Commi
Aid to Local Government

[15] A thorough de
in Albert R. Munse, Re
United States, 1959-60
Education and Welfare,

[16] ACIR, State A

[17] These interv
of some exploratory r
research project was
direction of Professo
Department.

[7]The theory of incrementalism in the federal budgetary process was originally developed by Otto A. Davis, M. A. H. Dempster and Aaron Wildavsky in their article, "A Theory of the Budgetary Process," American Political Science Review, Vol. LX, No. 3 (September 1966), 529-547.

[8]See Paul T. David and Ralph Eisenberg, Devaluation of the Urban and Suburban Vote, Vols. I and II (Charlottesville: University of Virginia Bureau of Public Administration, 1961); Manning J. Dauer and Robert G. Kelsay, "Unrepresentative States," National Municipal Review, Vol. XLIV (December 1955), 571-575; Glendon Schubert and Charles Press, "Measuring Malapportionment," American Political Science Review, Vol. LVIII (June 1964), 302-327.

[9]James S. Coleman, "Political Money," American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIV, No. 4 (December 1970), 1074-1087.

[10]See Julius Turner, Party and Constituency: Pressures on Congress (Revised Edition by Edward V. Schneier, Jr.). (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1970).

[11]Rankings of the States, 1970 (Washington: National Education Association, 1971), p. 46.

[12]Ibid., p. 45.

[13]For a good discussion of the development of educational finance systems, see Robert J. Garvue, Modern Public School Finance (London: MacMillan, 1969), particularly Chapter 9.

[14]Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations, State Aid to Local Government (Washington, D.C.: ACIR, 1969), pp. 4, 31-35.

[15]A thorough description of state revenue programs can be found in Albert R. Munse, Revenue Programs for the Public Schools in the United States, 1959-60 (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Office of Education, 1961).

[16]ACIR, State Aid to Local Government, op. cit., p. 46.

[17]These interviews were held during the summer of 1971 as part of some exploratory research on educational reform in Michigan. The research project was funded by the Urban Institute and was under the direction of Professor Frank A. Pinner of the MSU Political Science Department.

[18] Roger A. Freeman, The Institute for Social Sc
Laurence Iannaccone, Politi
Applied Research in Educati

[19] In cases where le
non-metropolitan counties,
constituent counties was u
non-metropolitan, then the
or the county of residence
counties, or if there were
metropolitan counties, the
selection) to make the des
since it ignores consider
rural differences within
way a common criterion co
analysis.

[20] The seven states
were: Alaska and Hawaii,
the Union, Colorado, Verm
included in their legisla
they lack metropolitan p

[21] The states incl

Alabama
Arizona
Arkansas
California
Connecticut
Florida
Georgia
Idaho
Kentucky

[22] The statistica
ysis were the Least Squ
Selection programs of
puter Laboratory at Mi
tical Analysis System
sity Computer Center.
with the analysis.

[18]Roger A. Freeman, Taxes for the Schools (Washington, D.C.: The Institute for Social Science Research, 1960), p. 249; see also, Laurence Iannaccone, Politics in Education (New York: The Center for Applied Research in Education, Inc., 1967).

[19]In cases where legislators represented both metropolitan and non-metropolitan counties, either the dominant characteristic of the constituent counties was used (i.e., if two of three counties were non-metropolitan, then the legislator was labelled non-metropolitan), or the county of residence was used (i.e., if there were only two counties, or if there were an equal number of metropolitan and non-metropolitan counties, then the legislator's home county guided the selection) to make the designation. This measure admittedly is crude, since it ignores considerable variation in the urban, suburban, and rural differences within the same county, but it was seen as the only way a common criterion could be applied to all the states in the analysis.

[20]The seven states not included in the apportionment analysis were: Alaska and Hawaii, because of their relatively recent entry into the Union, Colorado, Vermont, and Nebraska, because of inadequate data included in their legislative manuals, and Wyoming and Montana, because they lack metropolitan populations.

[21]The states included in the 26-state sample are:

Alabama	Louisiana	Rhode Island
Arizona	Maryland	South Carolina
Arkansas	Michigan	South Dakota
California	Nevada	Tennessee
Connecticut	New Jersey	Utah
Florida	New Mexico	Washington
Georgia	New York	West Virginia
Idaho	Oregon	Wisconsin
Kentucky	Pennsylvania	

[22]The statistical programs used at various stages of the analysis were the Least Squares, Least Squares Addition, and Least Squares Delection programs of the Agricultural Experiment Station and the Computer Laboratory at Michigan State University, and the BMD and Statistical Analysis System program packages at the George Washington University Computer Center. Appreciation is expressed to both for assistance with the analysis.

APPORTIONMENT

In 1962, before t

areas were significantly

Table III-1 shows the pr

itan counties for 43 sta

population for metropoli

two measures. As can be

the representation in s

states had over 50 perc

states on metropolitan

standard deviation of

population was 59.1 pe

Figure III-1* presents

sentation more graphic

the line of equality b

representation. Consi

rural states in the d

example, compare the

Maine and New Mexico

*All figures appear

CHAPTER III

APPORTIONMENT SYSTEMS AND STATE AID TO EDUCATION

In 1962, before the reapportionment decisions, metropolitan areas were significantly under-represented in state legislatures. Table III-1 shows the proportion of legislative seats from metropolitan counties for 43 states together with the percentage of the states' population for metropolitan counties and the difference between these two measures. As can be seen, only ten of the 44 had 50 percent of the representation in state legislatures, even though 24 of these states had over 50 percent metropolitan population. The mean for all states on metropolitan legislative power was 34.9 percent with a standard deviation of 22.5 percent, and the mean for the metropolitan population was 59.1 percent with a standard deviation of 22.8 percent. Figure III-1* presents the relationship between population and representation more graphically. Note that all of the states were below the line of equality between metropolitan population and metropolitan representation. Considerable variation existed in urban as well as rural states in the degree of metropolitan under-representation. For example, compare the distance of the comparatively rural states of Maine and New Mexico from the equality line, or the moderately

---

*All figures appear in the Appendix.

Pre-Reapportionm

	1960 Metropoli Populati (Percent
Alabama	51.8
Arizona	71.4
Arkansas	29.1
California	90.2
Connecticut	86.
Delaware	68.
Florida	67.
Georgia	46
Idaho	14
Illinois	78
Indiana	61
Iowa	3
Kansas	3
Kentucky	3
Louisiana	5
Maine	
Maryland	
Massachusetts	
Michigan	
Minnesota	
Mississippi	
Missouri	

TABLE III-1

Pre-Reapportionment Metropolitan Underrepresentation

	1960 Metropolitan Population (Percent)	1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power	1962 Metropolitan Underrepresentation
Alabama	51.8	34.1	17.7
Arizona	71.4	40.3	31.1
Arkansas	29.1	18.1	11.0
California	90.2	65.6	24.6
Connecticut	86.4	36.4	50.0
Delaware	68.9	19.2	49.7
Florida	67.1	27.6	39.5
Georgia	46.0	10.8	35.2
Idaho	14.0	4.5	9.5
Illinois	78.7	60.6	18.1
Indiana	61.2	49.0	12.2
Iowa	33.2	13.4	19.8
Kansas	39.1	12.7	26.4
Kentucky	34.8	16.2	18.6
Louisiana	53.7	42.6	11.1
Maine	27.8	27.2	0.6
Maryland	82.3	40.8	41.5
Massachusetts	97.4	94.8	2.6
Michigan	76.2	64.5	11.7
Minnesota	49.9	33.6	16.3
Mississippi	15.6	5.9	9.7
Missouri	60.1	45.9	14.2

Ta

	1960 Metropolitan Population (Percent)
Nevada	74.1
New Hampshire	29.4
New Jersey	90.2
New Mexico	27.6
New York	86.6
North Carolina	33.6
North Dakota	10.6
Ohio	76.8
Oklahoma	45.9
Oregon	58.7
Pennsylvania	78.8
Rhode Island	83.6
South Carolina	35.8
South Dakota	12.7
Tennessee	47.6
Texas	69.0
Utah	74.0
Virginia	53.4
Washington	63.1
West Virginia	30.9
Wisconsin	48.4

Table III-1 (Cont.)

	1960 Metropolitan Population (Percent)	1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power	1962 Metropolitan Underrepresentation
Nevada	74.1	26.1	48.0
New Hampshire	29.4	16.6	12.8
New Jersey	90.2	53.5	36.7
New Mexico	27.6	8.4	9.2
New York	86.6	74.5	12.1
North Carolina	33.6	20.2	13.4
North Dakota	10.6	3.2	7.4
Ohio	76.8	59.7	17.1
Oklahoma	45.9	20.6	25.3
Oregon	58.7	50.0	8.0
Pennsylvania	78.8	69.9	8.9
Rhode Island	83.6	76.1	7.5
South Carolina	35.8	20.1	15.7
South Dakota	12.7	8.2	4.5
Tennessee	47.6	27.3	20.3
Texas	69.0	38.0	31.0
Utah	74.0	40.7	34.0
Virginia	53.4	20.5	22.9
Washington	63.1	54.5	8.8
West Virginia	30.9	25.0	5.9
Wisconsin	48.4	47.3	1.1

etropolitan states, Wisconsin
states, Massachusetts and Conne
inequality appears to be just a
of states.

With reapportionment,
substantially reduced in all s
the proportion of legislators
percent of metropolitan popula
Twenty-three of the 44 states
legislature. Twelve have ove
p from three in 1962. The m
with a standard deviation of
plotted against 1967 metropo
that a sizeable number of st
representation or equality.

The relationship bet
itan over- or under-represe
and III-4. In both, the pe
is related to the degree of
etropolitan population to
shows that in 1962 the degr
states with low metropolit
isted also in states above
cent metropolitan populati
sentation they merit on a

metropolitan states, Wisconsin and Georgia, or the highly urbanized states, Massachusetts and Connecticut. The amount in variation of inequality appears to be just as great for these three different types of states.

With reapportionment, metropolitan under-representation was substantially reduced in all state legislatures. Table III-2 shows the proportion of legislators in 1967 for metropolitan counties, the percent of metropolitan population, and the difference between the two. Twenty-three of the 44 states now have a metropolitan majority in the legislature. Twelve have over 70 percent metropolitan representation, up from three in 1962. The mean for all 44 states is now 55.9 percent, with a standard deviation of 23.3 percent. When 1960 population is plotted against 1967 metropolitan power, as in Figure III-2, it is seen that a sizeable number of states are above the line of proportional representation or equality. The spread has clearly diminished.

The relationship between metropolitan population and metropolitan over- or under-representation is better shown in Figures III-3 and III-4. In both, the percent of population for metropolitan counties is related to the degree of urban under-representation or ratio of metropolitan population to metropolitan legislative power. Figure III-3 shows that in 1962 the degree of under-representation was greater in states with low metropolitan populations, although wide variation existed also in states above 50 percent. Nine states with over 50 percent metropolitan population have less than 60 percent of the representation they merit on a population basis. Four states are deviant

Post-Reapportionmen

	1960 Metropolita Populatio (Percent)
Alabama	51.8
Arizona	71.4
Arkansas	29.1
California	90.2
Connecticut	86.4
Delaware	68.9
Florida	67.1
Georgia	46.0
Idaho	14.0
Illinois	78.7
Iowa	33.2
Kansas	39.1
Kentucky	34.
Louisiana	53.
Maine	27.
Maryland	82
Massachusetts	97
Michigan	76
Minnesota	49
Mississippi	1
Missouri	6

TABLE III-2

Post-Reapportionment Metropolitan Representation

	1960 Metropolitan Population (Percent)	1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power	1967 Metropolitan Representation
Alabama	51.8	57.4	+5.6
Arizona	71.4	70.0	-1.4
Arkansas	29.1	35.5	+6.4
California	90.2	89.4	-0.8
Connecticut	86.4	84.0	-2.4
Delaware	68.9	67.6	-1.3
Florida	67.1	68.8	+1.7
Georgia	46.0	39.6	-6.4
Idaho	14.0	14.3	+0.3
Illinois	78.7	75.2	-3.5
Iowa	33.2	29.2	-4.0
Kansas	39.1	45.8	+6.7
Kentucky	34.8	22.8	-12.0
Louisiana	53.7	47.1	-6.6
Maine	27.8	27.6	-0.1
Maryland	82.3	63.8	-18.5
Massachusetts	97.4	98.3	+0.9
Michigan	76.2	84.3	+8.1
Minnesota	49.9	51.7	+1.8
Mississippi	15.6	6.4	-9.2
Missouri	60.1	56.7	-3.4

Table

	1960 Metropolita Population (Percent)
Nevada	74.1
New Hampshire	29.4
New Jersey	90.2
New Mexico	27.6
New York	86.6
North Carolina	33.6
North Dakota	10.6
Ohio	76.8
Oklahoma	45.9
Oregon	58.7
Pennsylvania	78.8
Rhode Island	83.0
South Carolina	35.
South Dakota	12.
Tennessee	47
Texas	69
Utah	74
Virginia	53
Washington	6
West Virginia	3
Wisconsin	4

Table III-2 (cont.)

	1960 Metropolitan Population (Percent)	1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power	1967 Metropolitan Representation
Nevada	74.1	70.0	-4.1
New Hampshire	29.4	45.3	+15.9
New Jersey	90.2	63.3	-26.9
New Mexico	27.6	11.7	-15.9
New York	86.6	84.1	-2.5
North Carolina	33.6	33.2	-0.4
North Dakota	10.6	12.2	+1.6
Ohio	76.8	73.7	-3.1
Oklahoma	45.9	43.6	-2.3
Oregon	58.7	59.2	+0.5
Pennsylvania	78.8	79.2	+0.4
Rhode Island	83.6	91.2	+7.6
South Carolina	35.8	31.3	-4.5
South Dakota	12.7	11.6	-1.1
Tennessee	47.6	48.0	+1.4
Texas	69.0	87.4	+18.4
Utah	74.0	67.3	-6.7
Virginia	53.4	38.8	-14.6
Washington	63.1	57.6	-5.5
West Virginia	30.9	30.2	-0.7
Wisconsin	48.4	49.1	+0.7

in the direction of equality in
Wisconsin, West Virginia and Sou
full representation for metropol
metropolitan to begin with. Wi
its metropolitan representation
setts. This can be attributed
la Follette progressivism and
conflict in Wisconsin politics
yet its metropolitan residents
ture. This may in part be due
delegation poses to the non-m
also related to the yankee pu
nation of Maine politics. We
metropolitan populations sign
states with similar metropol
under 1.0 at .80 and .65, re
for this pattern unless it i
metropolitan industrial base
dominant rural interests in

The most extensive
in 1962 are in states well
however, the pattern is di
population is seen to be t
of its population was met
this group was represente

in the direction of equality in metropolitan representation--Maine, Wisconsin, West Virginia and South Dakota. Massachusetts has almost full representation for metropolitan residents, but it is 98 percent metropolitan to begin with. Wisconsin is only half metropolitan, but its metropolitan representation is as equitable as that of Massachusetts. This can be attributed in part to the reformist tradition of La Follette progressivism and in part to the lack of urban and rural conflict in Wisconsin politics. Maine is only 28 percent metropolitan, yet its metropolitan residents are fully represented in the legislature. This may in part be due to the lack of threat the metropolitan delegation poses to the non-metropolitan majority, but it is probably also related to the yankee puritan tradition and the Republican domination of Maine politics. West Virginia and South Dakota give their metropolitan populations significantly more representation than other states with similar metropolitan percentages, yet both are considerably under 1.0 at .80 and .65, respectively. No simple explanation exists for this pattern unless it is that neither state has a large enough metropolitan industrial base to constitute a distinct threat to the dominant rural interests in the state.

The most extensive cases of metropolitan under-representation in 1962 are in states well known for their malapportionment. Again, however, the pattern is difficult to explain. Georgia's metropolitan population is seen to be the most under-represented: only 46 percent of its population was metropolitan in 1962, yet only 23 percent of this group was represented in the legislature. Delaware had a

69 percent metropolitan populati
lation was represented. Connect
of metropolitan residents in the
percent of them were represente
California represented a majori
59 percent and 73 percent respe
rent metropolitan populations,
lesser metropolitan states.

In some, wide variatio
politan areas were under-repre
politan areas proportional rep
remainder tended to under-rep
proportion to their percentag

Figure III-4 shows th
lation and metropolitan under
tionment. Although there is
tional representation), stat
1.0 than in 1962, particular
population is above 50 perc
this pattern are worth noti
154 percent representation
period. In contrast, Miss
representation of its 16 p
went from 30 percent to 42
population. New Jersey m
90 percent metropolitan p

69 percent metropolitan population, yet only 28 percent of this population was represented. Connecticut had the fifth highest proportion of metropolitan residents in the country (86.4 percent), and only 42 percent of them were represented in the legislature. New Jersey and California represented a majority of the metropolitan residents, with 59 percent and 73 percent respectively, but compared to their 90 percent metropolitan populations, the inequity was as great as in many lesser metropolitan states.

In some, wide variation existed in the degree to which metropolitan areas were under-represented. Only three states gave metropolitan areas proportional representation in the legislature. The remainder tended to under-represent metropolitan residents in direct proportion to their percentage of the population.

Figure III-4 shows the relationship between metropolitan population and metropolitan under-representation for 1967, after reapportionment. Although there is still variation (about 1.0, or proportional representation), states now cluster much more closely around 1.0 than in 1962, particularly those states in which the metropolitan population is above 50 percent. Several significant deviations from this pattern are worth noting. New Hampshire moved from 56 percent to 154 percent representation of the metropolitan population in this period. In contrast, Mississippi moved from 38 percent to 41 percent representation of its 16 percent metropolitan population. New Mexico went from 30 percent to 42 percent of its 28 percent metropolitan population. New Jersey moved from 59 percent to 70 percent of its 90 percent metropolitan population; Kentucky from 47 percent to

66 percent of its 35 percent met
metropolitan under-representatio
tionment in states with small m
such as New Jersey and Maryland
representation continued, despi
tions.

Although these figures
representation decreased betwe
the amount of the change resul
metropolitan power can be por
Table III-3 presents the figu
crease in power, broken into
metropolitan delegation remai
mained a majority, and state
majority status.

As can be seen, the
ing from 1.5 percent in Mai
figure is 78.4 percent, wit
Thirteen states more than d
the legislature and 21 incr
showed less than a 20 perc
Table III-3 also points ou
is also misleading as an i
states which showed signi
metropolitan majority to
that remained a minority.

66 percent of its 35 percent metropolitan population. The greatest metropolitan under-representation continues to exist after reapportionment in states with small metropolitan populations. In states such as New Jersey and Maryland, however, metropolitan under-representation continued, despite predominant metropolitan populations.

Although these figures show that the degree of urban under-representation decreased between 1962 and 1967, they do not indicate the amount of the change resulting from reapportionment. Change in metropolitan power can be portrayed in several different ways. Table III-3 presents the figure for 1962, 1967, and the percent increase in power, broken into the three groups--states in which the metropolitan delegation remained a minority, states in which it remained a majority, and states in which it moved from a minority to a majority status.

As can be seen, the amount of change varied considerably, ranging from 1.5 percent in Maine to 281 percent in North Dakota. The mean figure is 78.4 percent, with a standard deviation of 80.78 percent. Thirteen states more than doubled the metropolitan representation in the legislature and 21 increased it by over 50 percent. Only twelve showed less than a 20 percent increase in metropolitan strength. Table III-3 also points out the fact that the percent change figure is also misleading as an indicator of legislative power, since many states which showed significant percentage increases either have a metropolitan majority to begin with, or have a metropolitan minority that remained a minority. In order to test the hypothesis that a

Metropolitan Legislat
the Percent Increas

19

Minority Status Before and After Reapportionment

1. Arkansas
2. Georgia
3. Idaho
4. Iowa
5. Kansas
6. Kentucky
7. Louisiana
8. Maine
9. Mississippi
10. New Hampshire
11. New Mexico
12. North Carolina
13. North Dakota
14. Oklahoma
15. South Carolina
16. South Dakota
17. Tennessee
18. Virginia
19. West Virginia
20. Wisconsin

TABLE III-3

Metropolitan Legislative Power in 1962 and 1967, with the Percent Increase in Power, by Type of Change

	1962 PWR	1967 PWR	PCT CHG
Minority Status Before and After Reapportionment			
1. Arkansas	18.1	35.5	96.1
2. Georgia	10.8	39.6	266.7
3. Idaho	4.5	14.3	217.6
4. Iowa	13.4	29.2	117.9
5. Kansas	12.7	45.8	260.6
6. Kentucky	16.2	22.8	40.7
7. Louisiana	42.6	47.1	10.6
8. Maine	27.2	27.6	1.5
9. Mississippi	5.9	6.4	8.5
10. New Hampshire	16.6	45.3	172.9
11. New Mexico	8.4	11.7	39.3
12. North Carolina	20.2	33.2	64.4
13. North Dakota	3.2	12.2	281.3
14. Oklahoma	20.6	43.6	111.7
15. South Carolina	20.1	31.1	55.7
16. South Dakota	8.2	11.6	41.5
17. Tennessee	27.3	48.0	15.8
18. Virginia	20.5	38.8	36.1
19. West Virginia	25.0	30.2	20.8
20. Wisconsin	47.3	49.1	3.8

Tabl

19

Majority Status Before and After Reapportionment

1. California
2. Illinois
3. Massachusetts
4. Michigan
5. New Jersey
6. New York
7. Ohio
8. Pennsylvania
9. Rhode Island
10. Washington

Minority Status to Majority as a Result of Reapportionme

1. Alabama
2. Arizona
3. Connecticut
4. Delaware
5. Florida
6. Indiana
7. Maryland
8. Minnesota
9. Missouri
10. Nevada
11. Oregon
12. Texas
13. Utah

Table III-3 (Cont.)

	1962 PWR	1967 PWR	PCT CHG
Majority Status Before and After Reapportionment			
1. California	65.6	89.4	36.3
2. Illinois	60.6	75.2	24.1
3. Massachusetts	94.8	98.3	3.7
4. Michigan	64.5	84.3	30.7
5. New Jersey	53.5	63.3	18.3
6. New York	74.5	84.1	12.5
7. Ohio	59.7	73.7	23.5
8. Pennsylvania	69.9	79.2	13.3
9. Rhode Island	76.1	91.2	19.8
10. Washington	54.3	57.6	6.1
Minority Status to Majority Status as a Result of Reapportionment			
1. Alabama	34.1	57.4	68.3
2. Arizona	40.3	70.0	73.7
3. Connecticut	36.4	84.0	130.8
4. Delaware	19.2	67.6	252.1
5. Florida	27.6	68.8	149.3
6. Indiana	49.0	63.5	29.6
7. Maryland	40.8	63.8	56.4
8. Minnesota	33.6	51.7	53.9
9. Missouri	45.9	56.7	23.5
10. Nevada	26.1	70.0	168.2
11. Oregon	50.0	59.2	18.7
12. Texas	38.0	87.4	130.0
13. Utah	40.7	67.3	65.4

change in metropolitan status f

the greatest change in state ai

amount of change and the 1968 p

jority is necessary. The meas

difference between 1962 and 19

politan power divided by .510,

presents the figures for chan

legislative majority ranked f

Using this measure, a

change but no change in statu

ample, North Dakota drops fr

and Kansas from 3 to 12.

Texas, on the other

10 to 2, and California fro

role that the metropolitan

reapportionment. It will b

ropolitan states are ranked

32, Washington 34, Wisconsi

the demographic composition

cent. Without such change

study, no changes in the d

hence the low ranking. Ta

siderable amount of chang

latures as a result of re

changes in state aid to

change in metropolitan status from a minority to a majority produced the greatest change in state aid, a measure that reflects both the amount of change and the 1968 position related to a legislative majority is necessary. The measure adopted for this purpose is the difference between 1962 and 1967 metropolitan power, times 1968 metropolitan power divided by .510, a legislative majority. Table III-4 presents the figures for change in metropolitan power relative to a legislative majority ranked from most to least change.

Using this measure, a number of states with a high percentage change but no change in status are dropped down on the list. For example, North Dakota drops from No. 1 to No. 38, Georgia from 2 to 16, and Kansas from 3 to 12.

Texas, on the other hand, moved from 11 to 1, Connecticut from 10 to 2, and California from 24 to 6. These changes reflect the new role that the metropolitan delegation played in the states following reapportionment. It will be noted that a number of predominantly metropolitan states are ranked quite low. Rhode Island 28, Massachusetts 32, Washington 34, Wisconsin 39. This is due to the lack of changes in the demographic composition of the legislature following reapportionment. Without such change, at least in the context of the present study, no changes in the distribution of state aid could be expected; hence the low ranking. Taken as a group, these measures show a considerable amount of change in the demographic structure of state legislatures as a result of reapportionment. The analysis now turns to the changes in state aid to education.

Changes in Metropolitan I

1.	Iowa
2.	Texas
3.	Connec
4.	Delawa
5.	Nevada
6.	Florid
7.	Califo
8.	Arizon
9.	Utah
10.	Michi
11.	Alaba
12.	Kansa
13.	Maryl
14.	Rhode
15.	New H
16.	Geor
17.	Illi
18.	Ohio
19.	Okla
20.	Tenn
21.	Minn
22.	Indi
23.	Penn
24.	New
25.	Arka
26.	New
27.	Mis
28.	Ore
29.	Nor
30.	Vir
31.	Sou
32.	Mas
33.	Lo
34.	Wa
35.	We
36.	Ke
37.	Id
38.	Nc
39.	Wi
40.	Ma
41.	S
42.	N
43.	M

TABLE III-4

Changes in Metropolitan Legislative Power, Ranked High to Low

1.	Iowa	877.80
2.	Texas	844.74
3.	Connecticut	785.40
4.	Delaware	643.72
5.	Nevada	601.43
6.	Florida	556.20
7.	California	416.50
8.	Arizona	406.89
9.	Utah	356.44
10.	Michigan	326.70
11.	Alabama	309.89
12.	Kansas	297.90
13.	Maryland	287.50
14.	Rhode Island	270.29
15.	New Hampshire	252.56
16.	Georgia	224.64
17.	Illinois	214.62
18.	Ohio	203.00
19.	Oklahoma	199.50
20.	Tennessee	194.58
21.	Minnesota	182.81
22.	Indiana	181.25
23.	Pennsylvania	144.15
24.	New Jersey	121.52
25.	Arkansas	120.06
26.	New York	120.00
27.	Missouri	119.88
28.	Oregon	106.72
29.	North Carolina	84.50
30.	Virginia	78.28
31.	South Carolina	68.32
32.	Massachusetts	67.55
33.	Louisiana	41.40
34.	Washington	37.29
35.	West Virginia	30.68
36.	Kentucky	29.70
37.	Idaho	27.44
38.	North Dakota	20.70
39.	Wisconsin	17.28
40.	Maine	11.04
41.	South Dakota	7.82
42.	New Mexico	7.26
43.	Mississippi	6.00

State Aid to Education

State aid to local scho
supplement to the amount raised
The aid formula is ostensibly
designed to equalize the overa
educating students. In actual
with the equalization princip
through the legislature. Thi
vious chapter. State aid is
appropriated per pupil, or pe
in a state is more related t
public education than to the
tribution of that aid, howev
ical factors and is the focu

It should be noted
in this study have no neces
an educational program, for
no conclusive evidence on
achievement. More money m
tional programs. Second,
tion in the cost of educat
needs of students. Finall
the wide variation in the
the states.

State Aid to Education

State aid to local school districts in most states serves as a supplement to the amount raised by the school districts themselves. The aid formula is ostensibly based on some measure of need, and is designed to equalize the overall resources available to districts for educating students. In actual fact, significant compromises are made with the equalization principle in order to get the aid appropriation through the legislature. This process has been discussed in the previous chapter. State aid is usually examined in terms of the amount appropriated per pupil, or per-pupil aid. The level of per-pupil aid in a state is more related to the historic role played by the state in public education than to the immediate political situation. The distribution of that aid, however, is more directly influenced by political factors and is the focus of this study.

It should be noted at the outset that the aid figures examined in this study have no necessary relationship to the overall quality of an educational program, for several reasons. First, there is presently no conclusive evidence on the relationship between resources and achievement. More money may not produce significantly better educational programs. Second, the figures do not take into account variation in the cost of education in different states, or the different needs of students. Finally, and most importantly, they do not reflect the wide variation in the proportion of total revenues contributed by the states.

A high per-pupil aid fi

for the state rather than a com

many students of school finance

related. In the present study

at one point in time is not as

metropolitan and non-metropoli

the distribution and amount of

In 1962, the per-pupil

in the study ranged from $78

mean for all states was $181.

Metropolitan per-pupil aid ra

New Mexico, with a mean of $1

The aid figures for each sta

from high to low. As can be

tan per-pupil aid figures ar

and for 1968 it is .968. Th

the two aid figures can be

metropolitan per-pupil aid

not show differences in aid

vidual school districts.

districts within metropoli

aid appropriations. These

The generally hig

years is due primarily to

students and the high cos

A high per-pupil aid figure may simply indicate a large role for the state rather than a commitment to quality education, although many students of school finance argue that the two are necessarily related. In the present study the total per-pupil aid a state provides at one point in time is not as significant as its distribution among metropolitan and non-metropolitan school districts, and change in both the distribution and amount of aid over time.

In 1962, the per-pupil aid for the twenty-six states included in the study ranged from $78 in New Jersey to $330 in New Mexico. The mean for all states was $181.51, and the standard deviation was $63.33. Metropolitan per-pupil aid ranged from $70 in New Jersey to $303 in New Mexico, with a mean of $165.73 and a standard deviation of $65.49. The aid figures for each state are presented in Table III-5, ranked from high to low. As can be seen, the per-pupil aid and the metropolitan per-pupil aid figures are highly related. The r for 1962 is .971 and for 1968 it is .968. This unexpectedly high relationship between the two aid figures can be explained in several ways. First, the metropolitan per-pupil aid measure is an aggregate figure which does not show differences in aid between cities and suburbs, or across individual school districts. The educational needs and local resources of districts within metropolitan counties vary considerably, as do state aid appropriations. These are masked by the measure used here.

The generally high metropolitan per-pupil aid figures for both years is due primarily to the special educational needs of central city students and the high costs of operating central city school systems.

1962 State Per Pu
Pup

State Per Pupil Aid	
1. New Mexico	$330.
2. Oregon	295.
3. New York	274
4. Nevada	266
5. Washington	259
6. North Carolina	220
7. Florida	209
8. Utah	201
9. Pennsylvania	20
10. South Carolina	20
11. California	18
12. Kentucky	17
13. Arizona	1
14. Georgia	1
15. Maryland	1
16. Louisiana	1
17.5 West Virginia	1
17.5 Alabama	
19. Tennessee	
20. Michigan	
21. Rhode Island	
22. Arkansas	
23. Idaho	
24. Connecticut	
25. Wisconsin	
26. New Jersey	

TABLE III-5

1962 State Per Pupil Aid and Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, Ranked

State Per Pupil Aid			Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid		
1.	New Mexico	$330.00	1.	New Mexico	$303.00
2.	Oregon	295.00	2.	Oregon	295.00
3.	New York	274.00	3.	New York	261.00
4.	Nevada	266.00	4.	Nevada	259.00
5.	Washington	259.00	5.	Washington	248.00
6.	North Carolina	220.00	6.	North Carolina	214.00
7.	Florida	209.00	7.	South Carolina	211.00
8.	Utah	203.00	8.	Utah	196.00
9.	Pennsylvania	202.00	9.	Pennsylvania	183.00
10.	South Carolina	201.00	10.5	California	177.00
11.	California	186.00	10.5	Arizona	177.00
12.	Kentucky	179.00	12.	Florida	154.00
13.	Arizona	176.00	13.	Maryland	148.00
14.	Georgia	173.00	14.	Alabama	138.00
15.	Maryland	166.00	15.	Georgia	137.00
16.	Louisiana	156.00	16.	Michigan	132.00
17.5	West Virginia	149.00	17.	Kentucky	131.00
17.5	Alabama	149.00	18.	West Virginia	129.00
19.	Tennessee	142.00	19.	Tennessee	123.00
20.	Michigan	136.00	20.	Louisiana	122.00
21.	Rhode Island	122.00	21.	Rhode Island	120.00
22.	Arkansas	119.00	22.	Connecticut	110.00
23.	Idaho	114.00	23.	Idaho	101.00
24.	Connecticut	110.00	24.	Arkansas	95.00
25.	Wisconsin	107.00	25.	Wisconsin	75.00
26.	New Jersey	78.00	26.	New Jersey	70.00

Central city school systems rel

programs than suburban school

A second explanation f

aid formulae are attuned more

to political coalitions, and t

characteristics across differe

a similar proportion of the t

pupil basis. This finding wi

chapter. Given the strong re

study is on metropolitan powe

aid figures will be used onl

The metropolitan per-pupil a

figures will constitute the

The relative advanta

1962 ranged from a low of .

Carolina. The mean for all

of .106. The values for al

Note that the metropolitan

Arizona and South Carolina

districts. The remaining

four being located in the

range, six in the seventy

range, and one in the fif

these patterns will be pr

Central city school systems rely more heavily on state aid for their programs than suburban school systems.

A second explanation for the high correlation is that state aid formulae are attuned more to educational needs and resources than to political coalitions, and that metropolitan schools have similar characteristics across different states that results in their getting a similar proportion of the total state aid appropriation on a per-pupil basis. This finding will be given further attention in the final chapter. Given the strong relationship, and since the focus of the study is on metropolitan power and aid patterns, the state per-pupil aid figures will be used only intermittently in the remaining chapters. The metropolitan per-pupil aid and metropolitan relative advantage figures will constitute the two major dependent variables.

The relative advantage of metropolitan school districts in 1962 ranged from a low of .49 in Florida to a high of .107 in South Carolina. The mean for all states was .808 with a standard deviation of .106. The values for all states are presented in Table III-6. Note that the metropolitan districts in only three states (Oregon, Arizona and South Carolina) are at parity with the non-metropolitan districts. The remaining states trail off to Florida's .49 percent, four being located in the 90 percent range, seven in the 80 percent range, six in the seventy percent range, and four in the 60 percent range, and one in the fifty percent range. Possible explanations for these patterns will be presented in a later section.

1962 Metropolita

1. South
2. Arizo
3. Orego
4. North
5. Michi
6. Rhode
7. Utah
8. Wash
9. New
10. Neva
11. Idah
12. Alab
13. Conn
14. Wes
15. Ten
16. New
17. Ark
18. Pe
19. Ne
20. Ge
21. Ke
22. Ca
23. L
24. W
25. M
26. P

TABLE III-6

1962 Metropolitan Relative Advantage, Ranked

1.	South Carolina	1.07
2.	Arizona	1.01
3.	Oregon	1.00
4.	North Carolina	.96
5.	Michigan	.95
6.	Rhode Island	.93
7.	Utah	.90
8.	Washington	.89
9.	New Mexico	.89
10.	Nevada	.89
11.	Idaho	.87
12.	Alabama	.87
13.	Connecticut	.86
14.	West Virginia	.82
15.	Tennessee	.78
16.	New York	.77
17.	Arkansas	.76
18.	Pennsylvania	.71
19.	New Jersey	.71
20.	Georgia	.70
21.	Kentucky	.68
22.	California	.67
23.	Louisiana	.64
24.	Wisconsin	.60
25.	Maryland	.59
26.	Florida	.49

Metropolitan Legislative Power and State Aid

The previous two sectio
increases occurred in the pote
delegation in state legislatur
also occurred in the amount ar
and 1969. This section will e
are related.

1962 Power and State

politan power and metropolita
in Appendix. Several patter
lack of any systematic relat
creased metropolitan power d
aid expenditures to metropol
metropolitan per-pupil exper
$303, has the second smalles
study, 27.6 percent. The o
ables is .048.

The range in metrop
states with considerable m
insignificant metropolitan
politan per-pupil aid in l
politan power in the legis

The relationship
relative advantage is som
tinct. As seen in Figure

Metropolitan Legislative Power
and State Aid

The previous two sections have established that significant increases occurred in the potential voting power of the metropolitan delegation in state legislatures between 1962 and 1967, and that changes also occurred in the amount and distribution of state aid between 1962 and 1969. This section will examine the extent to which these changes are related.

1962 Power and State Aid: The relationship between 1962 metropolitan power and metropolitan per-pupil aid is potted in Figure III-5 in Appendix. Several patterns emerge. The most obvious pattern is the lack of any systematic relationship between the two variables. Increased metropolitan power does not have any apparent influence on state aid expenditures to metropolitan districts. In fact, the state in which metropolitan per-pupil expenditures are the greatest, New Mexico, with $303, has the second smallest metropolitan population of any in the study, 27.6 percent. The overall relationship between the two variables is .048.

The range in metropolitan per-pupil aid is just as great in states with considerable metropolitan power as it is in states with insignificant metropolitan power. The conclusion must be that metropolitan per-pupil aid in 1962 was not systematically related to metropolitan power in the legislature.

The relationship between metropolitan power and metropolitan relative advantage is somewhat different although not much more distinct. As seen in Figure III-6, metropolitan power does not appear

to advantage metropolitan distr

States with metropolitan major

their aid patterns as states w

all correlation between the tw

Despite this lack of

twenty-six states, several in

tend to support the hypothesi

trialized, urbanized states b

ward and to the right from th

Pennsylvania, California, New

Michigan could also be inclu

is run through these states

gothesized direction.

A second group of st

trialized, begins with Geor

through Kentucky, Arkansas,

into Utah, Arizona, and Ore

states would also be in the

for the two regression line

with low urbanization and

to support public educatio

therefore rely on state re

been the case in the South

better in such states both

the greater role played b

to advantage metropolitan districts in the distribution of state aid. States with metropolitan majorities show just as much variation in their aid patterns as states with metropolitan minorities. The overall correlation between the two variables is -.045.

Despite this lack of relationship among the variables for all twenty-six states, several interesting sub-patterns can be seen which tend to support the hypothesis. The first is a group of fairly industrialized, urbanized states beginning with Maryland and extending upward and to the right from the figure through Louisiana, Wisconsin, Pennsylvania, California, New Jersey, New York, and Rhode Island. Michigan could also be included in this group. If a regression line is run through these states alone, the pattern is clearly in the hypothesized direction.

A second group of states, generally less urbanized and industrialized, begins with Georgia and extends upward and to the right through Kentucky, Arkansas, Tennessee, West Virginia, Alabama, and then into Utah, Arizona, and Oregon. A regression line drawn through these states would also be in the hypothesized direction. One explanation for the two regression lines would be differences in resources. States with low urbanization and industrialization have fewer local resources to support public education than urban, industrial states, and must therefore rely on state revenues more heavily. This has traditionally been the case in the South. Metropolitan districts are likely to fare better in such states both because of their greater need and because of the greater role played by the states in funding educational services.

Although urban, indust

areas with greater local resou

more justification for distrib

to non-metropolitan districts,

lem of municipal overburden i

rising service costs), and th

tively tax the wealth of the

reliance on state aid.

As metropolitan legis

states, the relative advanta

While this interpretation of

at present, it offers a part

carefully with additional da

1967 Metropolitan Le

Aid: The post-reapportionme

lative power and metropolita

The most striking change in

states with a metropolitan

lier. Another significant

state aid. Whereas the ma

range in 1962, in 1968 the

In terms of patter

iables is no better than

cernible in Figure III-7,

increased metropolitan po

Although urban, industrial states generally have metropolitan areas with greater local resources to fund public education, and hence more justification for distributing a greater proportion of state aid to non-metropolitan districts, it should be noted again that the problem of municipal overburden in the central city (declining tax base, rising service costs), and the inability of central cities to effectively tax the wealth of the outlying suburban areas, increases their reliance on state aid.

As metropolitan legislative power increases in both groups of states, the relative advantage of metropolitan districts increases. While this interpretation of the data is only tentative and preliminary at present, it offers a partial explanation that can be examined more carefully with additional data.

1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power and 1969 Metropolitan State Aid: The post-reapportionment relationship between metropolitan legislative power and metropolitan per-pupil aid is shown in Figure III-7. The most striking change in the figure is the increase in the number of states with a metropolitan legislative majority. This was noted earlier. Another significant change is in the increase in the amount of state aid. Whereas the majority of states were located in the $100-$200 range in 1962, in 1968 these states clustered in the $200-$300 range.

In terms of patterns, the overall relationship between the variables is no better than in 1962 (r = .063). If any pattern is discernible in Figure III-7, it is one of decreasing metropolitan aid with increased metropolitan power. Other than New York, which as a result

of Governor Rockefeller's educ

creased its aid to local schoo

states are notably limited in

tricts. This is consistent w

the last section. The argume

the lack of support among mos

be expected to be greater.

Carolina and New Mexico) pro

metropolitan school district

majority of non-urbanized,

metropolitan districts than

This is partly attributable

cipal over-burden, but it a

would be expected if the re

The relationship b

relative advantage in 1968

correlation coefficient is

some support for the study

below .5 on the vertical

arately, it is seen that

to 50 percent of legislat

increases most dramatica

and malapportionment hav

California and New York.

until the metropolitan

of state aid, metropoli

of Governor Rockefeller's educational program has significantly increased its aid to local schools, the highly industrialized urbanized states are notably limited in their aid to metropolitan school districts. This is consistent with the resources argument entered in the last section. The argument is somewhat invalidated, however, by the lack of support among most of the southern states where aid could be expected to be greater. That three states (North Carolina, South Carolina and New Mexico) provided higher levels of support to their metropolitan school districts fails to offset the fact that the greater majority of non-urbanized, industrialized states provided less aid to metropolitan districts than states with greater metropolitan wealth. This is partly attributable to lower educational costs and lower municipal over-burden, but it also indicates a smaller state role than would be expected if the resource argument were valid.

The relationship between metropolitan power and metropolitan relative advantage in 1968 is also low, as shown in Figure III-8. The correlation coefficient is .016. Again, however, sub-patterns show some support for the study's hypothesis. If the patterns above and below .5 on the vertical axis, metropolitan power, are examined separately, it is seen that metropolitan relative advantage decreases up to 50 percent of legislative majority, and then begins increasing. It increases most dramatically in states where the urban-rural conflict and malapportionment have historically been the greatest: Connecticut, California and New York. On its face this pattern would suggest that until the metropolitan delegation is able to control the distribution of state aid, metropolitan school districts are disadvantaged in the

aid formula. This may be due
politan and non-metropolitan i
resources the metropolitan sch
support their educational proc

This explanation impl
sively, which we have already
explanation is that compromis
mittee or caucus that allows
fit relative to non-metropol
cities lose relative to the
gests that unless it is eith
ture and has the favor of th
it has control of the legis
cannot expect to be able to
itan school districts in th

Changes in Metropol
Aid: When changes in metr
majority is plotted agains
pupil aid between 1962 and
pattern emerges. The stat
in metropolitan legislati
lier, show the greatest i
igan, Arizona and Florida
the least change in metr
vada, and Connecticut).

aid formula. This may be due to the political rivalry between metropolitan and non-metropolitan interests, or simply to the greater local resources the metropolitan school districts usually have available to support their educational programs.

This explanation implies that the metropolitan bloc votes cohesively, which we have already said it does not. The only alternative explanation is that compromises are made within the delegation in committee or caucus that allows both city and suburban districts to benefit relative to non-metropolitan districts, even though the central cities lose relative to the suburbs. The pattern in this figure suggests that unless it is either a very small percentage of the legislature and has the favor of the non-metropolitan delegation, or unless it has control of the legislature itself, the metropolitan delegation cannot expect to be able to gain an advantage position from metropolitan school districts in the state aid formula.

Changes in Metropolitan Legislative Power and Changes in State Aid: When changes in metropolitan power relative to a legislative majority is plotted against the percent of change in metropolitan per-pupil aid between 1962 and 1969, as shown in Figure III-9, a curious pattern emerges. The states that experience the greatest increases in metropolitan legislative power, using the definition described earlier, show the greatest increase in metropolitan per-pupil aid (Michigan, Arizona and Florida). But they were also the states which showed the least change in metropolitan per-pupil aid (California, Utah, Nevada, and Connecticut). The remainder of the states in the study

	Percent Increase 19
1. Flori	
2. New Y	
3. Arizo	
4. Mich	
5. New	
6. Wisc	
7. Idah	
8. Tenn	
9. Sou	
10. Ark	
11. Ore	
12. Rho	
13. Wes	
14. Ken	
15. Al	
16. Ge	
17. Pe	
18. No	
19. N	
20. M	
21. L	
22. U	
23.	
24.	
25.	
26.	

TABLE III-7

Percent Increase in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969, Ranked

1.	Florida	1.883
2.	New York	1.375
3.	Arizona	1.367
4.	Michigan	1.280
5.	New Jersey	1.271
6.	Wisconsin	1.107
7.	Idaho	1.069
8.	Tennessee	1.057
9.	South Carolina	1.024
10.	Arkansas	0.968
11.	Oregon	0.966
12.	Rhode Island	0.925
13.	West Virginia	0.845
14.	Kentucky	0.817
15.	Alabama	0.812
16.	Georgia	0.781
17.	Pennsylvania	0.765
18.	North Carolina	0.659
19.	New Mexico	0.637
20.	Maryland	0.622
21.	Louisiana	0.598
22.	Utah	0.566
23.	California	0.469
24.	Connecticut	0.436
25.	Washington	0.315
26.	Nevada	0.178

cluster together on both vari

that significant increases i

period required but did not

creases in metropolitan powe

Connecticut, all of which ex

power, did not increase thei

be due more to the demograph

system of the state than to

system of public education h

the most progressive in the

state aid formula combined

through a rapidly expanding

and therefore legislative p

aid. A similar situation m

strong New England sense of

creases in state aid would

to increase state aid to me

tributable to the local wea

and Reno. The local wealth

the relatively low service

eliminates much of the nee

Why Michigan, Ariz

aid to metropolitan school

be speculated upon. Michi

lated to the power of the

cluster together on both variables. Again, the interpretation must be that significant increases in metropolitan per-pupil aid during this period required but did not necessarily follow from significant increases in metropolitan power. The fact that California, Nevada, and Connecticut, all of which experienced major increases in metropolitan power, did not increase their aid to metropolitan school districts may be due more to the demographic setting and the previous educational system of the state than to shifts in metropolitan power. California's system of public education has traditionally been considered one of the most progressive in the country. The progressive, "professional" state aid formula combined with the local resources made available through a rapidly expanding local economy could have reduced the need and therefore legislative pressure for increased metropolitan per-pupil aid. A similar situation may have existed for Connecticut, although a strong New England sense of localism and a resistance to major increases in state aid would probably also be a factor. Nevada's failure to increase state aid to metropolitan school districts is probably attributable to the local wealth of its two metropolitan areas, Las Vegas and Reno. The local wealth available to support public education, plus the relatively low service needs of Nevada's metropolitan population, eliminates much of the need for additional state aid.

Why Michigan, Arizona and Florida substantially increased their aid to metropolitan school districts during this period can also only be speculated upon. Michigan's increase is probably most directly related to the power of the educational establishment, both teachers and

administrators, in actively l

legislature. During the same

lectively bargain with local

resulting rapid increases in

produced an increased local

sures for additional state a

The federal money ma

nentary and Secondary Educa

in the size and the role of

in turn made it more effect

aid. Finally, the racial

between 1965 and 1967 focus

systems and produced press

Arizona's demograp

centage of the population

difference between the tw

local wealth that Nevada

higher service needs. On

through reapportionment,

have felt more pressure

was greater state aid to

Florida's increa

be as directly related

Domination of Florida's

under malapportionment

administrators, in actively lobbying for increased state aid in the legislature. During the same period, teachers won the right to collectively bargain with local school districts over salaries, and the resulting rapid increases in teachers' salaries throughout the state produced an increased local tax burden which in turn produced pressures for additional state aid.

The federal money made available through Title 2 of the Elementary and Secondary Education Act of 1965 permitted a rapid expansion in the size and the role of the Michigan Department of Education, which in turn made it more effective in lobbying for and administering state aid. Finally, the racial violence in Detroit and other Michigan cities between 1965 and 1967 focussed attention on the problems of urban school systems and produced pressures for additional state aid.

Arizona's demography is similar to Nevada's, with a large percentage of the population living in several metropolitan areas. The difference between the two states is that Arizona does not have the local wealth that Nevada has and it has a metropolitan population with higher service needs. Once it attained a majority in the legislature through reapportionment, the Arizona metropolitan delegation may well have felt more pressure to satisfy these service needs, one of which was greater state aid to metropolitan schools.

Florida's increase in metropolitan per-pupil aid can probably be as directly related to reapportionment as any state in the country. Domination of Florida's legislative policy making by rural legislators under malapportionment has been examined at length by Havard and Beth.

Reapportionment permitted the
of its past grievances. The
tates that one of its priorit
districts.

Increases in metropo
level of state support for m
not indicate whether such ch
metropolitan districts. Tab
percent increase in the rela
tricts between 1962 and 196
were made in only six of th
New York, California, Idaho
istered gains of from zero
in power. The Florida inc
that reapportionment was a
increase did not occur une
could have been expected f
pense of non-metropolitan

The state with th
relative advantage was Ne
last section because it d
itan power as the other
tradition of metropolita
gains of metropolitan di
that even though the met

Reapportionment permitted the metropolitan delegation to redress some of its past grievances. The position of Florida in Figure III-9 indicates that one of its priorities was state aid to metropolitan school districts.

Increases in metropolitan per-pupil aid show changes in the level of state support for metropolitan school districts, but they do not indicate whether such change is greater or less than for non-metropolitan districts. Table III-8 and Figure III-10 present the percent increase in the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts between 1962 and 1967. The figures show that significant gains were made in only six of the twenty-six states in the study: Florida, New York, California, Idaho, Maryland and Alabama. The remainder registered gains of from zero to twenty percent regardless of the increase in power. The Florida increase of 91 percent supports the argument that reapportionment was a significant factor in the change, since the increase did not occur unequally uniformly throughout the state as could have been expected from the last figure, but rather at the expense of non-metropolitan districts.

The state with the second greatest increase in metropolitan relative advantage was New York. New York was not discussed in the last section because it did not show as great an increase in metropolitan power as the other states, but it is another state with a strong tradition of metropolitan out-state legislative conflict. The relative gains of metropolitan districts following reapportionment indicates that even though the metropolitan delegation was already in a majority

		Percent Increase in
1.	Flo	
2.	New	
3.	Cal	
4.	Ida	
5.	Ma	
6.	Al	
7.	Ke	
8.	Rh	
9.	Wi	
10.	Wa	
11.	C	
12.5	L	
12.5	A	
14.5	N	
14.5	N	
16.		
17.		
18.		
20.		
21.		
22.		
23.		
24.		
25.5		
25.5		

TABLE III-8

Percent Increase in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969, Ranked

1.	Florida	85.7
2.	New York	66.2
3.	California	52.2
4.	Idaho	46.0
5.	Maryland	37.3
6.	Alabama	27.6
7.	Kentucky	16.2
8.	Rhode Island	15.1
9.	Wisconsin	13.3
10.	Washington	12.4
11.	Connecticut	11.6
12.5	Louisiana	10.9
12.5	Arizona	10.9
14.5	New Mexico	09.0
14.5	Nevada	09.0
16.	New Jersey	08.5
17.	West Virginia	07.3
18.	South Carolina	06.5
20.	Tennessee	05.1
21.	Michigan	04.2
22.	Arkansas	03.9
23.	Georgia	01.4
24.	Utah	01.1
25.5	Oregon	00.0
25.5	North Carolina	00.0

in 1962 in New York, with 7

took the additional 10 perc

the distribution of state a

Certainly other factors, su

lence, also contributed to

control of the legislature

as well.

While California sh

of state aid to metropolita

change in metropolitan rel

severely malapportioned Se

state aid formula. Figure

inated this control and al

bute the already high leve

Idaho's 50 percent

cannot be attributed to i

leaves limited resources

areas as the most likely

Maryland's increa

63.8 percent and Alabama

both provided the majori

formula and increase the

tricts. In five of the

relative advantage, the

reapportionment provide

in 1962 in New York, with 74 percent of the seats in both houses, it took the additional 10 percent provided by reapportionment to shift the distribution of state aid more in favor of metropolitan districts. Certainly other factors, such as municipal over-burden and urban violence, also contributed to this change, but the history of up-state control of the legislature makes reapportionment a likely major factor as well.

While California showed relatively little change in the amount of state aid to metropolitan districts, it had the third highest change in metropolitan relative advantage. In 1962, California's severely malapportioned Senate allowed rural interests to control the state aid formula. Figure III-10 indicates that reapportionment eliminated this control and allowed metropolitan legislators to redistribute the already high level of aid more toward metropolitan centers.

Idaho's 50 percent increase in metropolitan relative advantage cannot be attributed to increased metropolitan legislative power, which leaves limited resources and a shift in population from rural to urban areas as the most likely explanation.

Maryland's increase in metropolitan power from 40.8 percent to 63.8 percent and Alabama's increase from 34.1 percent to 57.4 percent both provided the majority necessary to take control of the state aid formula and increase the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts. In five of the six distinctive cases of gains in metropolitan relative advantage, the increases in metropolitan power resulting from reapportionment provided a clearly plausible explanation for the

changes that occurred. Whi

variables is small (r = .19

basic argument.

Changes in Metropol

final way to examine the in

bution of state aid is in t

itan delegation. The hypot

amount of change in both me

relative advantage will be

delegation moved from a mi

remained either in a minor

a value of 1 to states in

which it remained a majori

status, the relationship b

state aid can be portraye

relationship for changes

ance of this pattern is

response of these three t

have a minority metropol

fairly modest and unifor

States which continued t

ation in their increases

became a majority follo

least amount of change,

change for states in c

changes that occurred. While the overall relationship between the variables is small (r = .199), the deviant cases give support to the basic argument.

Changes in Metropolitan Status and Changes in State Aid: A final way to examine the influence of reapportionment on the distribution of state aid is in terms of changes in status of the metropolitan delegation. The hypothesis guiding the analysis is that the amount of change in both metropolitan per-pupil aid and metropolitan relative advantage will be greater in states where the metropolitan delegation moved from a minority to a majority position than where it remained either in a minority or a majority. By arbitrarily assigning a value of 1 to states in which it remained a minority, 2 to states in which it remained a majority, and 3 to states in which it changed status, the relationship between changes in status and changes in state aid can be portrayed graphically. Figure III-11 presents this relationship for changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid. The significance of this pattern is that it shows the distinct variation in the response of these three types of states. States which continued to have a minority metropolitan delegation after reapportionment show a fairly modest and uniform increase in metropolitan per-pupil aid. States which continued to have a metropolitan majority show more variation in their increases. States in which the metropolitan delegation became a majority following reapportionment are seen to range from the least amount of change, in Nevada, to the most, in Florida. The mean change for states in category 1 was 94.9; for category 2, 91.4; and

for category 3, 84.0. These

States moving from a minority

increase in per pupil aid tha

The relationship bet

change in metropolitan advan

inconsistency. Category 1 s

tively little change with th

are also grouped together,

of California and New York.

only Florida showing more c

than states in the other ca

In sum, it would a

vided a plausible explanat

tion of state aid to local

as clear or as strong an i

low correlation between m

bution of state aid sugge

model are necessary. One

the composition of the m

which it is more and les

for category 3, 84.0. These findings do not support the hypothesis. States moving from a minority to a majority status show less of an increase in per pupil aid than states in the other two categories.

The relationship between change in metropolitan status and change in metropolitan advantage in Figure III-12 shows a similar inconsistency. Category 1 states are grouped together, showing relatively little change with the exception of Idaho. Category 2 states are also grouped together, showing little change with the exception of California and New York. Group 3 states are spread out more, with only Florida showing more change in metropolitan relative advantage than states in the other categories.

In sum, it would again appear that while reapportionment provided a plausible explanation for changes in the amount and distribution of state aid to local school districts in some states, it was not as clear or as strong an influence as had been expected. The generally low correlation between metropolitan power and the amount and distribution of state aid suggest that additional refinements in the basic model are necessary. One such refinement is to examine more precisely the composition of the metropolitan delegation and the conditions under which it is more and less likely to influence the state aid formula.

METRO

STA

The metropolitan de

representatives from a vari

The diversity of demands an

tuencies make simple typolo

and coalitions within the

tions can be made. A signi

socio-economic and the dem

suburbs. Other research h

officials of central citie

on both the cause and the

further distinctions may

safe to assume the basic

of central city (particul

lators.

Distinguishing c

of their constituencies

legislative district bou

trict boundaries often

Labeling districts as o

CHAPTER IV

METROPOLITAN DEMOGRAPHY AND STATE AID TO EDUCATION

The metropolitan delegation of a state legislature includes representatives from a variety of different types of constituencies. The diversity of demands and expectations that flow from these constituencies make simple typologies and characterizations as to cleavages and coalitions within the delegation hazardous. Still, basic distinctions can be made. A significant body of research has documented the socio-economic and the demographic differences between cities and suburbs. Other research has shown that the citizenry and the elected officials of central cities and suburbs have clearly different views on both the cause and the solution of most urban problems. While further distinctions may be on shaky or empirical grounds, it seems safe to assume the basic difference in values and role orientations of central city (particularly larger central city) and suburban legislators.

Distinguishing central city and suburban legislators in terms of their constituencies is difficult because of the size and shape of legislative district boundaries. Particularly in state senates, district boundaries often encompass elements of both cities and suburbs. Labeling districts as one or the other inevitably involves subjective

judgments that are likely to
alternative approach, to be
easure based on the populat

The "one man, one vo
portionment has meant that
in rough proportion to thei
somewhat arbitrary but real
for distinguishing between
determine the proportion of
representing each type of
the metropolitan populatio
of the metropolitan delega
cities. The distinction b
portant here as the distin
communities. The assumpti
the two in the definition
tion, and that these diff
lators.

Where a sizeable
from larger cities, great
coalition building than
the delegation represent
more likely to be able t
metropolitan delegation

judgments that are likely to vary from one "expert" to the next.[1] The alternative approach, to be used in this study, is to use a surrogate measure based on the population characteristics of metropolitan areas.

The "one man, one vote" criterion used as the basis for reapportionment has meant that central cities and suburbs are represented in rough proportion to their percentage of the population. Using the somewhat arbitrary but realistic cut-off point of 100,000 as the basis for distinguishing between central city and suburbs, it is possible to determine the proportion of the reapportioned metropolitan delegation representing each type of constituency. For example, if 35 percent of the metropolitan population lives in cities over 100,000, 35 percent of the metropolitan delegation would be assumed to represent central cities. The distinction between central city and suburb is not as important here as the distinction between larger and smaller metropolitan communities. The assumption is that clear differences exist between the two in the definition of problems and in approaches to their solution, and that these differences are reflected in the views of legislators.

Where a sizeable proportion of the metropolitan delegation is from larger cities, greater conflict can be expected in bargaining and coalition building than where it is an insignificant minority. Where the delegation represents demographically homogeneous districts, it is more likely to be able to act cohesively in dealing with the non-metropolitan delegation of the legislature.

A second source of c

is race. The special needs

a large non-white populatio

and suburbs over taxes and

suburban life style values

centage of non-whites in la

the metropolitan delegation

in dealing with the non-met

The evidence availa

study is limited. Since t

number in any sub-category

cannot be treated as concl

the metropolitan delegatio

politan legislative power

lowing analysis will test

tan legislators from large

white population in these

of state aid.

Large City Representation and State Aid

Table IV-1 shows

lation living in cities

ean for all states is 3

20.57 percent. The rang

Nevada, South Carolina a

A second source of conflict within the metropolitan delegation is race. The special needs of larger cities are usually aggravated by a large non-white population. Basic differences between central cities and suburbs over taxes and services are reinforced by the threat to suburban life style values that non-whites pose. The greater the percentage of non-whites in large metropolitan cities, the more likely the metropolitan delegation is to be divided and therefore ineffective in dealing with the non-metropolitan delegation.

The evidence available to test these hypotheses in the present study is limited. Since the total number of states is only 26, the number in any sub-category is likely to be so small that the findings cannot be treated as conclusive. Yet the question of division within the metropolitan delegation must be examined if the concept of metropolitan legislative power is to have any theoretical utility. The following analysis will test whether or not the proportion of metropolitan legislators from large metropolitan cities and the percent of non-white population in these cities influence the amount and distribution of state aid.

Large City Representation and State Aid

Table IV-1 shows the percent of each state's metropolitan population living in cities over 100,000, ranked from high to low. The mean for all states is 34.31 percent, with a standard deviation of 20.57 percent. The range is considerable, from zero percent in Idaho, Nevada, South Carolina and West Virginia, to 70 percent and 76 percent

	Percent of Metrop Cit
1.	New
2.	Ari
3.	New
4.	Lou
5.	Ten
6.	Wa
7.	Wi
8.	Ge
9.	Ca
10.	Al
11.	M
12.	K
13.	M
14.	O
15.	P
16.	N
17.	
18.	
19.	
20.	
21.	
22.	
23.	
24.	
25.	
26.	

TABLE IV-1

Percent of Metropolitan Population Living in Large Cities in 1960, Ranked

1.	New Mexico	76.79
2.	Arizona	70.20
3.	New York	64.50
4.	Louisiana	54.00
5.	Tennessee	53.59
6.	Washington	49.20
7.	Wisconsin	45.39
8.	Georgia	41.50
9.	California	40.09
10.	Alabama	40.00
11.	Michigan	38.00
12.	Kentucky	36.89
13.	Maryland	36.79
14.	Oregon	35.89
15.	Rhode Island	28.89
16.	Florida	28.59
17.	Utah	28.39
18.	North Carolina	28.20
19.	Pennsylvania	26.50
20.	Connecticut	26.39
21.	New Jersey	21.29
22.	Arkansas	20.70
23.	West Virginia	0.00
24.	South Carolina	0.00
25.	Nevada	0.00
26.	Idaho	0.00

in Arizona and New Mexico.

of metropolitan residents in

of metropolitan legislators

truly homogeneous and presum

the sample are from the fou

As already noted, t

tion will be inferred from

tionment was based. Using

tion living in cities over

mine the size of the domin

in the metropolitan delega

of metropolitan power, thi

of the dominant metropoli

will hereafter be referre

Since the present

voting power of the metro

measure need only reflect

changes occur in the ove

of "defections" from the

Figure IV-1 plot

1969 metropolitan per-pu

still considerable disp

less than for the simpl

from .063 to .367. Dev

ticut, and New Jersey,

in Arizona and New Mexico. Note that only five states have a majority of metropolitan residents in large cities, and by inference a majority of metropolitan legislators from larger cities. In contrast, the only truly homogeneous and presumably cohesive metropolitan delegations in the sample are from the four states with no large cities.

As already noted, the composition of the metropolitan delegation will be inferred from the 1960 census figures upon which reapportionment was based. Using the proportion of the metropolitan population living in cities over 100,000 as a base, it is possible to determine the size of the dominant coalition (either large city or suburban) in the metropolitan delegation. As a proportion of the overall level of metropolitan power, this figure becomes the potential voting power of the dominant metropolitan coalition in the legislature. The measure will hereafter be referred to as Power 2.

Since the present analysis is concerned only with the potential voting power of the metropolitan delegation, refinements in the power measure need only reflect potential "erosion" of that power, not what changes occur in the overall alignment in the legislature as a result of "defections" from the dominant coalition.

Figure IV-1 plots the relationship between this measure and 1969 metropolitan per-pupil aid. As can be seen, although there is still considerable dispersion about the regression line, it is much less than for the simple power measure. The correlation has increased from .063 to .367. Deviant states are Nevada, Rhode Island, Connecticut, and New Jersey, all with relatively high levels of power but

low levels of aid; and New

some extent deviations from

terms of the historical eco

states discussed in the las

plained in terms of the con

which will be discussed in

The refined power

metropolitan relative adva

states fall outside the ex

being the most conspicuous

creased slightly over the

association between the tw

The second refinem

racial homogeneity of the

whites living in large met

Idaho, Nevada, South Caro

Alabama. The mean for al

a standard deviation of 1

for all states.

The measure herea

simplified but necessary

whites in public educatio

power of the metropolitan

proportion to the percent

measure (100 minus percen

low levels of aid; and New York, showing the opposite pattern. To some extent deviations from the expected patterns can be explained in terms of the historical economic or other conditions in individual states discussed in the last chapter. To some extent they can be explained in terms of the composition of the large city delegation, which will be discussed in a moment.

The refined power measure is much less effective in explaining metropolitan relative advantage. As shown in Figure IV-2, a number of states fall outside the expected pattern, New Mexico, Idaho and Nevada being the most conspicuous examples. While the correlation has increased slightly over the basic power measure from .016 to .062, the association between the two variables is still negligible.

The second refinement of the power measure is based on the racial homogeneity of the central city delegation. The percent of non-whites living in large metropolitan cities in 1960 ranged from zero in Idaho, Nevada, South Carolina and West Virginia, to 35.89 percent in Alabama. The mean for all states in the sample was 14.32 percent with a standard deviation of 12.62 percent. Table IV-2 shows the figures for all states.

The measure hereafter referred to as Power 3 makes the over-simplified but necessary assumption that the interests of blacks and whites in public education are essentially incompatible, and that the power of the metropolitan delegation is therefore diminished in direct proportion to the percent of blacks in large cities. The resulting measure (100 minus percent of non-whites in large cities times the

	Percent of Non-Wh
1.	Ala
2.	Mar
3.	Lou
4.	Geo
5.	Ten
6.	No
7.	Fl
8.	Ar
9.	Ne
10.	Ke
11.	M
12.	C
13.	C
14.	P
15.	N
16.	P
17.	
18.	
19.	
20.	
21.	
22.	
23.	
24.	
25.	
26.	

TABLE IV-2

Percent of Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1960, Ranked

1.	Alabama	35.89
2.	Maryland	35.00
3.	Louisiana	33.92
4.	Georgia	33.64
5.	Tennessee	31.73
6.	North Carolina	30.32
7.	Florida	23.50
8.	Arkansas	23.50
9.	New Jersey	20.03
10.	Kentucky	18.00
11.	Michigan	12.36
12.	Connecticut	11.75
13.	California	10.46
14.	Pennsylvania	9.99
15.	New York	9.98
16.	Rhode Island	5.80
17.	Oregon	5.60
18.	Wisconsin	5.40
19.	Washington	5.39
20.	Arizona	5.10
21.	New Mexico	2.90
22.	Utah	2.10
23.	West Virginia	0.00
24.	South Carolina	0.00
25.	Nevada	0.00
26.	Idaho	0.00

percent of metropolitan popu

refined power measure just e

sentially it reflects the "v

the power of the dominant c

When Power 3 is cor

the relationship again incr

Figure IV-3, it is seen tha

to states with high levels

delegations dominated by l

and New Mexico are the bes

question of whether the va

is of metropolitan power.

next chapter.

When the Power 3

tive advantage in Figure

Although the correlation

measure (r = .160), it i

creasing metropolitan re

seem to be present for t

extending through New Yo

extremes of Idaho and N

Virginia, the Carolinas

the relationship.

To some extent

vada's position, for e

percent of metropolitan population living in large cities, plus the refined power measure just examined) is somewhat circuitous, but essentially it reflects the "white power" of large cities combined with the power of the dominant coalition in the metropolitan delegation.[2]

When Power 3 is correlated with metropolitan per-pupil aid, the relationship again increases from .367 to .489. When plotted in Figure IV-3, it is seen that the Power 3 measure gives special weight to states with high levels of metropolitan power and metropolitan delegations dominated by large, predominantly white cities. Arizona and New Mexico are the best examples of these states. This raises the question of whether the variable is as much a measure of wealth as it is of metropolitan power. This question will be dealt with in the next chapter.

When the Power 3 measure is correlated with metropolitan relative advantage in Figure IV-4, the results are again disappointing. Although the correlation is again slightly higher than for the Power 2 measure ($\underline{r}$ = .160), it is still insignificant. While a pattern of increasing metropolitan relative advantage with increases in power does seem to be present for the group of states beginning with Georgia and extending through New York, the numerous deviations ranging from the extremes of Idaho and New Mexico to Rhode Island, Pennsylvania, West Virginia, the Carolinas and Alabama, reduce the overall strength of the relationship.

To some extent the deviant states can be accounted for. Nevada's position, for example, is largely an artifact of the definition

used. Since it has no citie
non-white population, neithe
power score are present, ye
among larger and smaller me
probably also present. Bot
ropolitan delegation and co
tive advantage in state aid
defining larger cities at

The second group o
tucky, West Virginia, the
higher metropolitan relati
in terms of the Power 3 me
plausible. The first is
in large cities is high,
interests are probably no
they are in northern stat
ical culture and to the
has allowed traditional
ical process. The confl
legislature may therefor
easure would indicate.

The second expl
politan relative advant
siveness of many southe
standards. Whether out

used. Since it has no cities over 100,000 and therefore no large-city non-white population, neither of the factors that would reduce its power score are present, yet legislative conflict is probably present among larger and smaller metropolitan cities and racial friction is probably also present. Both would erode the effectiveness of the metropolitan delegation and could result in a reduced metropolitan relative advantage in state aid. None of this is caught by arbitrarily defining larger cities at 100,000.

The second group of deviant states consists of Arkansas, Kentucky, West Virginia, the Carolinas, and Alabama, all of which have higher metropolitan relative advantage scores than would be expected in terms of the Power 3 measure. Several explanations are at least plausible. The first is that even though the percentage of non-whites in large cities is high, which produces the lower Power 3 score, their interests are probably not as well represented in the legislature as they are in northern states. This is due both to the southern political culture and to the rapid growth of many large southern cities that has allowed traditional civic elites to retain control over the political process. The conflict between large and small cities in the legislature may therefore be less in these states than the Power 3 measure would indicate.

The second explanation for the disproportionately high metropolitan relative advantage in these states is the increasing responsiveness of many southern states to national values in policy-making standards. Whether out of a desire to attract northern industry, the

need to qualify for federal

inequities, the high metrop

states may be a response to

The third possible

relative advantage is desi

the central cities. Southe

in many other parts of the

costs of suburban schools

the generally high percent

cation.

While these explan

at least a partial ration

the three metropolitan me

Alternative Apportionment and State Aid Patterns

The analysis thus

three measures of metrop

cation. It remains to t

more effective as a pred

sures that have been dev

As noted in Cha

based essentially on th

tion in the size of leg

in showing the degree o

rect theoretical relat

need to qualify for federal funds, or simply a desire to redress past inequities, the high metropolitan relative advantage of southern states may be a response to these types of nationalizing trends.

The third possible explanation is that the high metropolitan relative advantage is designed to benefit the white suburbs more than the central cities. Southern suburbs are growing faster than those in many other parts of the country, and the high capital construction costs of suburban schools are borne mainly by the states because of the generally high percentage of funds they contribute to public education.

While these explanations are only speculative, they provide at least a partial rationale for the low correlation between any of the three metropolitan measures and metropolitan relative advantage.

Alternative Apportionment Measures and State Aid Patterns

The analysis thus far has examined the relationship between three measures of metropolitan legislative power and state aid to education. It remains to test whether the metropolitan power measure is more effective as a predictor of state aid patterns than the other measures that have been developed.

As noted in Chapter II, other apportionment measures have been based essentially on the principle of equity, or the degree of variation in the size of legislative districts. Such measures, while useful in showing the degree of under-representation in a state, have no direct theoretical relationship to state policy choices. Put differently,

a high degree of inequality
cates an under-representatio
representation is specified
of knowing whether malappor
disadvantage urban interest

The measure used i
criticisms by focusing dir
fore and after reapportion
theoretical relationship w
do not have, the validity
tingent upon its superior
pressed to explain why th
lated to state aid than t

Still, if the pow
it should be a better pre
relatively low explanato
with state aid than the

In order to test
metropolitan power and t
coefficient of variatio
related with metropolit
vantage both before and
apportionment measures
politan per-pupil aid
are presented in Table

a high degree of inequality in legislative district size probably indicates an under-representation of urban areas, but unless urban under-representation is specified directly in the measure, there is no way of knowing whether malapportionment is producing state policies that disadvantage urban interests.

The measure used in the present study is designed to meet these criticisms by focusing directly on metropolitan legislative power before and after reapportionment. Since the power measure establishes a theoretical relationship with state aid policy that the other measures do not have, the validity or persuasiveness of the analysis is not contingent upon its superior explanatory power. Indeed, one would be hard pressed to explain why the other measures should be more strongly related to state aid than the power measure.

Still, if the power measure is theoretically more defensible, it should be a better predictor of state aid patterns. Despite its relatively low explanatory power, it should be more strongly associated with state aid than the other apportionment measures.

In order to test this hypothesis in a preliminary fashion, metropolitan power and two other apportionment measures--the inverted coefficient of variation and the Dauer-Kelsey measures--have been correlated with metropolitan per-pupil aid and metropolitan relative advantage both before and after reapportionment. Changes in the three apportionment measures have also been correlated with changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid and metropolitan relative advantage. The results are presented in Tables IV-3, IV-4, and IV-5.

Correlations Betwe
1962

	PWR
PWR	
ICV	.276
DK	.352
MPPA	.048
MRA	.045

Correlations Be
1

	PWR	PWR2
PWR		
PWR2	.495	
PWR3	.372	.799
ICV	.498	.117
DK	.605	.313
MPPA	.063	.368
MRA	.017	.062

*Note: Full descripti
following tabl

TABLE IV-3*

Correlations Between 1962 Apportionment Variables and
1962 State Aid Variables

	PWR	ICV	DK	MPPA	MRA
PWR					
ICV	.276				
DK	.352	.563			
MPPA	.048	.030	.010		
MRA	.045	.160	.231	.433	

TABLE IV-4*

Correlations Between 1967 Apportionment Variables and
1969 State Aid Variables

	PWR	PWR2	PWR3	ICV	DK	MPPA	MRA
PWR							
PWR2	.495						
PWR3	.372	.799					
ICV	.498	.117	.227				
DK	.605	.313	.295	.854			
MPPA	.063	.368	.489	.305	.332		
MRA	.017	.062	.160	.160	.192	.543	

*Note: Full descriptions of the variables abbreviated in these and following tables can be found on pages 42-44.

Correlation B

1962-196

	CHGPWR
CHGPWR	
CHGICV	.682
CHGDK	.343
CHGMPPA	.076
CHGMRA	.236

TABLE IV-5

Correlation Between Changes in Apportionment,
1962-1967 and Changes in State Aid,
1962-1969

	CHGPWR	CHGICV	CHGDK	CHGMPPA
CHGPWR				
CHGICV	.682			
CHGDK	.343	.718		
CHGMPPA	.076	.027	.166	
CHGMRA	.236	.450	.214	.419

As shown in Table I

apportionment variables was

related to either of the t

None of the three measures

politan per-pupil aid or m

power measure was slightly

aid and the other two meas

itan relative advantage.

In Table IV-4, it

iables is significantly h

Again, the power measure,

strongly associated with

other. The relationship

significantly stronger a

tionship between metropo

increases from .048 to .

.030 to .305; and Dauer-

refinements in the basi

metropolitan per-pupil

lation with metropolita

measures.

When changes in

aid, in Table IV-5, it

among the apportionmen

Coefficient of Variati

As shown in Table IV-3, in 1962 the relationship between the apportionment variables was not strong. The power measure was less related to either of the two measures than they were to each other. None of the three measures was strongly correlated with either metropolitan per-pupil aid or metropolitan relative advantage, although the power measure was slightly more associated with metropolitan per-pupil aid and the other two measures slightly more associated with metropolitan relative advantage.

In Table IV-4, it is seen that the relationship among the variables is significantly higher after reapportionment than before. Again, the power measure, now in three different forms, is not as strongly associated with the other measures as they are with each other. The relationship between metropolitan power and state aid is significantly stronger after reapportionment than before. The relationship between metropolitan per-pupil aid and the basic power measure increases from .048 to .063; inverted coefficient of variation from .030 to .305; and Dauer-Kelsey from .010 to .332. As noted earlier, refinements in the basic power measure increase its relationship with metropolitan per-pupil aid even more. Power 3 has the highest correlation with metropolitan per-pupil aid of any of the five apportionment measures.

When changes in apportionment are related to changes in state aid, in Table IV-5, it is seen that again, the highest correlation among the apportionment variables is between change in the Inverted Coefficient of Variation and change in Dauer-Kelsey (.718), although

the correlation between cha

and change in Metropolitan

strong interrelationships

ment variables, only chang

is significantly related t

level or less, having a co

Relative Advantage. As n

ing is difficult because

tween the two variables.

the variation of the size

increases in the distribu

tricts than either increa

creases in the minimum p

majority of the legislat

two should be more relat

measure isn't more stron

the change measures is

not included in them.

city and suburban coali

conflict, within the ce

in these two measures.

provides as much expla

apportionment variable

the correlation between change in the Inverted Coefficient of Variation and change in Metropolitan Power is also high (.684). Despite these strong interrelationships in the amount of change among the apportionment variables, only change in the Inverted Coefficient of Variation is significantly related to any of the state aid variables at the .05 level or less, having a correlation of .450 with change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage. As noted earlier, the interpretation of this finding is difficult because of the lack of a theoretical relationship between the two variables. All one can conclude is that a reduction in the variation of the size of legislative districts was more related to increases in the distribution of state aid to metropolitan school districts than either increases in metropolitan legislative power or increases in the minimum percent of a state's population able to elect a majority of the legislature. Intuition would suggest that the latter two should be more related. One reason that the Metropolitan Power measure isn't more strongly related to the 1962 power measure or to the change measures is that the refinements in the 1968 measures are not included in them. Changes in the relative strength of the central city and suburban coalitions, and in the degree of racially-based conflict, within the central city delegation, could not be included in these two measures. Even without the refinements, however, it provides as much explanatory power in most instances as the other two apportionment variables.

The Predictive Power of the Apportionment Variables

Thus far the analys
simple measures of associa
apportionment systems and
in developing interesting
patterns in the data, they
atory or predictive power
function of the regressio
but one that measures the
variables are able to acc
iable. In the present s
ation in the two measure
metropolitan power measu
a series of control vari
individual impact of eac
end of these chapters,
the cumulative explanat
Chapter VI.

Table IV-6 pre
apportionment variable
tistics of most use in
ables are P, F, and r^2
computed F ratio or p
chance. The lower th

The Predictive Power of the Apportionment Variables

Thus far the analysis has relied on descriptive statistics and simple measures of association to examine the relationship between apportionment systems and state aid. While such statistics are useful in developing interesting interpretations and explanations of the patterns in the data, they do not permit any assessment of the explanatory or predictive power of the model being tested. This is the function of the regression, a similar statistic to the correlation, but one that measures the extent to which one or more independent variables are able to account for variation in a given dependent variable. In the present study we are interested in the amount of variation in the two measures of state aid that can be explained by the metropolitan power measure, the two other apportionment measures, and a series of control variables to be examined in the next chapter. The individual impact of each of these variables will be summarized at the end of these chapters, and the interaction effect of the variables and the cumulative explanatory power of the model will be discussed in Chapter VI.

Table IV-6 presents the regression statistics for the different apportionment variables and Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid.[3] The two statistics of most use in determining the explanatory power of the variables are P, F, and r^2. The first represents the probability that the computed F ratio or proportion of explained variance could occur by chance. The lower the probability, the greater the significance of

Regression Sta
and M

Variable	h
1962	
METPWR	15
ICV	
DK	
1967	
METPWR	3
PWR2	
PWR3	
ICV	
DK	
Change 1962-67	
CHGPWR	
CHGSTATUS	
CHGICV	
CHGDK	

TABLE IV-6

Regression Statistics for Apportionment Variables
and Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

Variable	b	F	P > F	r^2
1962				
METPWR	15.23	.056	.809	.002
ICV	.090	.022	.877	.000
DK	.003	.002	.962	.000
1967				
METPWR	30.94	.096	.757	.004
PWR2	.227	3.74	.062	.135
PWR3	.153	7.15	.013	.230
ICV	.005	2.46	.127	.093
DK	1.17	2.97	.094	.110
Change 1962-67				
CHGPWR	-.001	.140	.713	.006
CHGSTATUS	-5.48	.004	.950	.000
CHGICV	.000	.018	.889	.000
CHGDK	.002	.680	.577	.027

the F ratio; r^2 represents

pendent variable "explaine

When one examines

Table IV-6, it is seen tha

variables for Metropolitan

tenths of one percent in

both cases the Metropolit

variation. Note also tha

dropped substantially, th

the .01 level.

The figures for

aid are generally simila

low r^2 values.

When the regress

tage are examined in Tab

explanatory power of th

apportionment variables

5.3 percent of the vari

The unusually

cient of Variation mea

Relative Advantage, as

In sum, the co

found to be a valid an

apportionment systems

superior in accountin

the F ratio; r^2 represents the proportion of the variance in the dependent variable "explained" by a given apportionment variable.

When one examines these statistics for 1962 and 1967-69 in Table IV-6, it is seen that the explanatory power of the apportionment variables for Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid moved from a high of two-tenths of one percent in 1962 to twenty-three percent in 1967-69. In both cases the Metropolitan Power measures accounted for the most variation. Note also that the significance levels of the F ratios dropped substantially, the Power 3 measure in 1967-69 nearly reaching the .01 level.

The figures for change in apportionment and change in state aid are generally similar to those for 1962, with high P values and low r^2 values.

When the regression statistics for Metropolitan Relative Advantage are examined in Table IV-7, there is much less improvement in the explanatory power of the variables from 1962 to 1967-69. None of the apportionment variables in either year is able to explain more than 5.3 percent of the variance, and the P values are all quite high.

The unusually high explanatory power of the Inverted Coefficient of Variation measure in accounting for change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, as already noted, remains anomalous.

In sum, the concept of metropolitan legislative power has been found to be a valid and useful basis for examining the influence of apportionment systems on state policy. The Power 3 measure is clearly superior in accounting for variance in the level of Metropolitan

Regression St
and Me

Variable	b
1962	
METPWR	-3
ICV	
DK	
1967-69	
METPWR	
PWR2	
PWR3	
ICV	
DK	
Change 1962-69	
CHGPWR	
CHGSTATUS	
CHGICV	
CHGDK	

TABLE IV-7

Regression Statistics for Apportionment Variables
and Metropolitan Relative Advantage

Variable	b	F	P < F	r^2
1962				
METPWR	-3.19	.049	.820	.002
ICV	.106	.629	.559	.026
DK	-.019	1.35	.256	.053
1967-69				
METPWR	1.14	.006	.934	.000
PWR2	.005	.093	.760	.003
PWR3	.004	.239	.634	.010
ICV	.000	.965	.663	.039
DK	.095	.916	.650	.037
Change 1962-69				
CHGPWR	.003	1.42	.244	.055
CHGSTATUS	62.98	1.58	.218	.061
CHGICV	.003	6.09	.020	.202
CHGDK	.002	1.56	.293	.046

per-Pupil Aid, and althou

variance in Metropolitan

variables are not better.

unexpectedly high explana

cient of Variation variab

Relative Advantage. Some

patterns in the Metropoli

sented in the final chapt

per-Pupil Aid, and although it is not able to account for much of the variance in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, the other apportionment variables are not better. The major anomaly of the analysis is the unexpectedly high explanatory power of the change in Inverted Coefficient of Variation variable in accounting for changes in Metropolitan Relative Advantage. Some tentative explanations for these unusual patterns in the Metropolitan Relative Advantage variable will be presented in the final chapter.

[1]The procedure of
basis for classifying dis
with the heads of the Dem
in Michigan indicated tha
all the states in the stu
for 1962, much less class
and would have been more
inal analysis of changes
tion following reapportio

[2]The measure is
that white central city
tors, when the suburbs a
delegation, a violation
garding coalitions. Str
power of the dominant fa
of the dominant element
ture. This measure pro
were tried.

[3]The four regre

(1) The unstan
which is the slope of
represents the amount
with a given change in
variables being held c

(2) F, or the
pendent variable expla

(3) P > F or
of freedom, significan
occur by chance;

(4) r^2 is th
iable "explained" by
tions of the mathemat
applications can be f
and Behavioral Scienc
1969), and N. R. Drap
York: John Wiley and

CHAPTER IV

Notes

[1]The procedure of subjective evaluation was considered as a basis for classifying districts in the present study, but discussions with the heads of the Democratic and Republican state central committees in Michigan indicated that it would be too cumbersome and imprecise for all the states in the study. Further, even obtaining the district maps for 1962, much less classifying them, proved to be a problem in Michigan and would have been more difficult in other states, making a longitudinal analysis of changes in the composition of the metropolitan delegation following reapportionment next to impossible.

[2]The measure is obviously unsatisfactory, in that it assumes that white central city legislators will align with suburban legislators, when the suburbs are the dominant coalition in the metropolitan delegation, a violation of the assumptions in the first refinement regarding coalitions. Still, a measure was necessary that related the power of the dominant faction of the large city delegation to the power of the dominant element of the metropolitan delegation in the legislature. This measure proved to be the most satisfactory of a number that were tried.

[3]The four regression statistics included in the table are:

(1) The unstandardized regression coefficient or beta (b), which is the slope of the regression or least squares equation. Beta represents the amount of change in the dependent variable associated with a given change in one independent variable, the other independent variables being held constant;

(2) F, or the ratio of the proportion of variance in the dependent variable explained to the proportion not explained;

(3) P > F or the significance level of F for 26 and 24 degrees of freedom, significance being the probability that a given value would occur by chance;

(4) r^2 is the proportion of the variance in the dependent variable "explained" by the independent variable. More detailed explanations of the mathematical derivation of these statistics and their applications can be found in Dennis J. Palumbo, Statistics in Political and Behavioral Science, esp. Chapters 7 and 8 (New York: Appleton, 1969), and N. R. Draper and H. Smith, Applied Regression Analysis (New York: John Wiley and Son, 1967).

ALTERNATIVE

The discussion ar

tionment and state aid i

of alternative equally p

tions for state aid. Th

Power 3, accounted for c

per-pupil aid, and that

for more than 4 percent

vantage, indicates that

the overall explanatory

the persuasiveness of t

power relative to other

The present cha

series of intervening

analyzed in the last t

three categories: eco

Economic Characterist
and Patterns of State

The sizeable

discussed in Chapter

related to the level

CHAPTER V

ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATIONS OF STATE AID PATTERNS

The discussion and analysis of the relationship between apportionment and state aid in the last two chapters has ignored a number of alternative equally plausible and theoretically grounded explanations for state aid. The fact that the "best" apportionment variable, Power 3, accounted for only 23 percent of the variation in metropolitan per-pupil aid, and that none of the apportionment variables accounted for more than 4 percent of the variance in metropolitan relative advantage, indicates that these other factors may significantly increase the overall explanatory and predictive power of the model. Further, the persuasiveness of the Power 3 measure depends upon its explanatory power relative to other sets of variables, not independent of them.

The present chapter will examine the relationship between a series of intervening or control variables and the state aid measures analyzed in the last two chapters. These variables can be grouped under three categories: economic, social-demographic, and political.

Economic Characteristics of States and Patterns of State Aid

The sizeable body of research on state expenditure patterns discussed in Chapter II suggests that state fiscal policy is more related to the level of economic development and the wealth of the

state than to its politic

the argument in its simpl

state provides to local s

resources it has to draw

sources is per-capita per

ship between per-capita

pupil aid in 1968.[1] As

strong (r = .049). New

the highest income to al

pupil aid. The remainde

states.

A tentative patt

in the lower left of the

non-southern states (wi

ing metropolitan per-pu

esis is not supported b

When disposable

advantage in Figure V-

low overall relationsh

southern states are no

the conclusion must be

it is a negative one.

sion local wealth, app

stimulant to state ai

A more practi

wealth on state aid i

state than to its political characteristics. As applied to state aid, the argument in its simplest form would be that the amount of aid a state provides to local school districts is directly related to the resources it has to draw upon. The most direct measure of such resources is per-capita personal income. Figure V-1 shows the relationship between per-capita personal income in 1966 and metropolitan per-pupil aid in 1968.[1] As can be seen, the overall relationship is not strong (r = .049). New York is the only one of the six states with the highest income to also provide a high level of metropolitan per-pupil aid. The remainder provide as little as or less than poorer states.

A tentative pattern is revealed when the eight southern states in the lower left of the figure are not considered. The pattern among non-southern states (with the exception of New York) is one of decreasing metropolitan per-pupil aid with increases in income. The hypothesis is not supported by the data.

When disposable income is plotted against metropolitan relative advantage in Figure V-2, the pattern becomes even more dispersed. The low overall relationship (r = .082) is still unclear even when the southern states are not included. In terms of the present study, then, the conclusion must be that if income has any influence on state aid, it is a negative one. Put differently, personal wealth, and by extension local wealth, appear to act as a substitute rather than as a stimulant to state aid expenditure.

A more practical and direct way of examining the influence of wealth on state aid is in terms of the educational tax burden, or the

percent of personal inco

Figure V-3 shows the rel

per-pupil aid. The corr

as high (r = .454) as wh

Still, there is consider

no discernible pattern

the greatest educationa

Mexico and Arizona--are

growing urban centers,

sonal rather than corpo

aid.

The relationshi

advantage is presented

(r = .373) than for met

higher than for any of

cases in the diagram,

politan advantage than

Again, the states diff

explanations can be pr

bases which reduce the

and Alabama both have

central cities. Idah

ficult to understand,

neither the political

metropolitan populati

percent of personal income paid in local and state educational taxes. Figure V-3 shows the relationship between tax burden and metropolitan per-pupil aid. The correlations between the two variables is almost as high ($\underline{r}$ = .454) as when the metropolitan power measure is used. Still, there is considerable dispersion about the regression line and no discernible pattern among the most deviant cases. The states with the greatest educational tax burden--Louisiana, Oregon, Utah, New Mexico and Arizona--are all relatively non-industrial states with growing urban centers, which accounts in part for the reliance on personal rather than corporate income and the high metropolitan per-pupil aid.

The relationship between tax burden and metropolitan relative advantage is presented in Figure V-4. The correlation is lower ($\underline{r}$ = .373) than for metropolitan per-pupil aid, but it is significantly higher than for any of the apportionment variables. The most deviant cases in the diagram, Alabama, Idaho, and New York, show more metropolitan advantage than would be indicated by the states' tax burdens. Again, the states differ greatly from one another, and only tentative explanations can be provided. All have substantial industrial tax bases which reduce the individual educational tax burden. New York and Alabama both have large, high service need populations in their central cities. Idaho's high metropolitan relative advantage is difficult to understand, since the one metropolitan area in the state has neither the political power nor the concentrated high service need metropolitan population that might explain such an advantaged position.

When changes in pe

per-pupil aid are examine

pattern is in the hypothe

tween the variables is mo

line appears to be slight

increases in personal inc

aid. Again, the southern

linear pattern by having

with only average increa

however, there is consid

and only moderate suppor

When changes in

metropolitan relative a

ship is negligible (r =

metropolitan relative a

percent increase in per

increase in income. Th

The position of metropo

state aid does not see

of increases in wealth

come.

Although the

deviant cases, in gene

terns than the other

seemingly obvious con

When changes in personal income and changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid are examined in Figure V-5, it is seen that the overall pattern is in the hypothesized direction and that the relationship between the variables is moderately strong (r = .259). The regression line appears to be slightly curvilinear, with states having moderate increases in personal income showing the greatest increases in state aid. Again, the southern states are distinctive, creating the curvilinear pattern by having the greatest percentage increase in income with only average increases in aid. Even without the southern states, however, there is considerable dispersion about the regression line and only moderate support for the hypothesized relationship.

When changes in personal income are plotted against changes in metropolitan relative advantage, in Figure V-6, the overall relationship is negligible (r = -.071). States showing marked increases in metropolitan relative advantage range from Idaho, with only a 48.2 percent increase in personal income, to Florida, with a 74.7 percent increase in income. The southern states are again educationally inert. The position of metropolitan school districts in the distribution of state aid does not seem to have been improved significantly as a result of increases in wealth, at least as measured in terms of personal income.

Although the tax burden variable does not account for individual deviant cases, in general it is a better predictor of state aid patterns than the other variables included thus far in the model. The seemingly obvious conclusion that a heightened tax burden produces high

metropolitan state aid ha
sonal income is not relat
not wealth per se, but th
that makes the difference
plete, they suggest that
ability of the political
on the citizenry, are mo
levels in accounting for
becomes, "What are the
explanation is the chara
politan environment its

Social-Demographic Fact
and State Aid Patterns

A second altern
the argument that educa
rather than economic r
educational expenditur
lated to the character
population. In the p
test this hypothesis:
population; the size
living in large citie
population that is n
public schools. The

metropolitan state aid has several important implications. Since personal income is not related to state aid, it would appear that it is not wealth per se, but the commitment of that wealth to education, that makes the difference in expenditures. While the data are incomplete, they suggest that political factors, measured here as the ability of the political system to impose high educational tax burdens on the citizenry, are more important than economic factors or income levels in accounting for metropolitan state aid. The question thus becomes, "What are the conditions that foster such commitments?" One explanation is the characteristics and educational needs of the metropolitan environment itself.

Social-Demographic Factors and State Aid Patterns

A second alternative set of explanatory variables is based on the argument that educational expenditures are a function of needs rather than economic resources or political preferences. Metropolitan educational expenditures are seen to be largely pre-determined and related to the characteristics and educational needs of the metropolitan population. In the present analysis, four variables will be used to test this hypothesis: size and proportion of the states' metropolitan population; the size and proportion of the metropolitan population living in large cities (over 100,000); the proportion of large-city population that is non-white; and the percentage of students attending public schools. These variables reflect various types of demands on

metropolitan public schoo

They will be examined in

Figure V-7 plots

population (in thousands)

be seen, although the si

states in the sample var

to 14,537,000 in New Yor

of under 2,000,000; the

deviation, 3,913,700. N

apparent in the data. T

of California, New Jerse

metropolitan population

Figure V-8 shows

1966 state population i

tive advantage. The co

not only low, but also

pothesized. States wit

from New York, with 86.

with only 14 percent.

in metropolitan relati

California and 1.28 in

tions range from .79 t

the metropolitan popul

tion of state aid to m

metropolitan public schools that might affect educational expenditures. They will be examined in turn.

Figure V-7 plots the relationship between 1966 metropolitan population (in thousands) and 1969 metropolitan per-pupil aid. As can be seen, although the size of the metropolitan population of the states in the sample varied considerably, ranging from 93,000 in Idaho to 14,537,000 in New York, all but seven have metropolitan populations of under 2,000,000; the overall mean is 2,933,000 and the standard deviation, 3,913,700. No clear overall patterns or sub-patterns are apparent in the data. The low correlation (r = .029) and the position of California, New Jersey, New Mexico and South Carolina show the metropolitan population to be a poor predictor of state aid.

Figure V-8 shows the relationship between the percent of the 1966 state population in metropolitan areas and the metropolitan relative advantage. The correlation (r = -.052) shows the pattern to be not only low, but also to be in the opposite direction from that hypothesized. States with high metropolitan relative advantage range from New York, with 86.5 percent metropolitan population, to Idaho, with only 14 percent. States with a high metropolitan population range in metropolitan relative advantage from .77 in New Jersey to 1.02 in California and 1.28 in New York. States with low metropolitan populations range from .79 in Arkansas to 1.27 in Idaho. The percentage of the metropolitan population does not appear to influence the distribution of state aid to metropolitan school districts.

Large metropoli

proportionately high nee

heavy demand on local r

state aid. An increase

tion should therefore p

Figure V-9 presents the

metropolitan population

correlation between the

metropolitan population

among the states is not

the larger number of st

it is apparent that the

significant bearing on

any variable included

Just as the ed

ence the level of aid

ence changes in the le

the mid-1960s and the

problems by the Colema

petus for additional a

ship between the size

the change in metropo

weak relationship (r

educational needs of

in aid. When large-c

Large metropolitan cities generally have populations with disproportionately high need for public services. These needs place a heavy demand on local resources, which in turn increases reliance on state aid. An increase in the size of large-city metropolitan population should therefore produce an increase in the amount of state aid. Figure V-9 presents the relationship between the size of the large-city metropolitan population and metropolitan per-pupil aid. Although the correlation between the variables is higher, at .436, than between metropolitan population and metropolitan per-pupil aid, the pattern among the states is not clear when presented graphically because of the larger number of states with small large-city populations. Still, it is apparent that the size of the large-city population has a more significant bearing on the level of metropolitan per-pupil aid than any variable included in the model except for the Power 3 measure.

Just as the educational needs of large-city populations influence the level of aid at one point in time, so also should they influence changes in the level of aid over time. The racial violence of the mid-1960s and the extensive documentation of large-city educational problems by the Coleman report and other studies, both produced an impetus for additional aid revenues. Figure V-10 presents the relationship between the size of the large-city metropolitan population and the change in metropolitan per-pupil aid between 1962 and 1969. The weak relationship (r = .180) and dispersed pattern shows that the educational needs of large cities did not produce significant increases in aid. When large-city metropolitan population is related to changes

in metropolitan relative

to .526. Figure V-11 pl

self understates the pat

the correlation is not o

suggests that shifts in

school districts during

educational needs of la

To the extent t

tional needs, the metro

increase as the percent

increases. Figure V-1

is not supported by the

however, masks several

The three stat

population in large ci

politan relative advan

from the states with

the metropolitan relat

from .99 to .89. Wit

significant large-cit

vantage are all south

in large cities. Lou

cent non-white; Geor

percent, the third,

in the study. While

a factor in the disa

in metropolitan relative advantage, however, the correlation increases to .526. Figure V-11 plots this relationship. While the figure itself understates the pattern and points up inconsistencies, and while the correlation is not objectively high, the releationship clearly suggests that shifts in the distribution of aid toward metropolitan school districts during the period were the result of the demonstrated educational needs of large cities.

To the extent that large-city populations have special educational needs, the metropolitan relative advantage in state aid should increase as the percentage of metropolitan residents in large cities increases. Figure V-12 presents this relationship. The hypothesis is not supported by the data. The low overall relationship ($\underline{r}$ = .096), however, masks several interesting sub-patterns.

The three states with the highest percentage of metropolitan population in large cities are the only sub-set of states with a metropolitan relative advantage greater than 1.0. When Idaho is removed from the states with no metropolitan populations in the large cities, the metropolitan relative advantage of that group drops considerably, from .99 to .89. With the exception of Wisconsin, the states with significant large-city populations but low metropolitan relative advantage are all southern states, with high concentrations of non-whites in large cities. Louisiana's large metropolitan cities are 33.9 percent non-white; Georgia's are 33.69 percent; and Tennessee's are 31.7 percent, the third, fourth, and fifth highest percent of the 26 states in the study. While rural poverty and educational needs may also be a factor in the disadvantaged position of metropolitan school districts,

race is probably an impo

as the explanation for a

southern states, however

has the highest percenta

cities of any state in t

A third demograp

the proportion of non-wh

urban populations requi

extent to which their s

determined by the amoun

state and federal gover

types of problems shou

Figures V-13 through V-

metropolitan populatio

itan relative advantag

tween 1962 and 1969.

In Figure V-1

percentage of non-whit

the exception of Mary

also among the states

Florida and North Car

tinctive in that it h

metropolitan populati

the third lowest met

states in the study,

race is probably an important determinant as well. The use of race as the explanation for a low metropolitan relative advantage in southern states, however, is clearly contradicted by Alabama, which has the highest percentage of non-whites in its large metropolitan cities of any state in this study.

A third demographic factor, briefly touched upon above, is the proportion of non-whites in large metropolitan cities. Non-white urban populations require a high level of specialized services. The extent to which their special educational needs are met is largely determined by the amount of inter-governmental aid provided by the state and federal governments. The responsiveness of states to these types of problems should be reflected in the distribution of state aid. Figures V-13 through V-15 examine the influence of large, non-white metropolitan populations on 1969 metropolitan per-pupil aid, metropolitan relative advantage, and changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid between 1962 and 1969.

In Figure V-13, it is seen that the states with the largest percentage of non-whites in large cities are all in the South, with the exception of Maryland, which is a border state. These states are also among the states with the lowest metropolitan per-pupil aid, Florida and North Carolina being the exceptions. New Jersey is distinctive in that it has the largest proportion of non-whites in its metropolitan population of any northern industrial state, yet it has the third lowest metropolitan per-pupil aid of any of the twenty-six states in the study, $159.

The great majorit

whites in their large-ci

course does not account

the percent in cities of

large metropolitan citie

might be expected. The

suggests that the variab

aid.

When the influe

vantage is examined in

Among states with even

cities, only Alabama pr

it does to non-metropol

out among the states w

Finally, when

cities is related to t

in Figure V-15, the ov

The six states with th

metropolitan cities a

Florida shows the gre

surprisingly, New Jer

pupil aid. When the

whites are factored o

direction. Still, th

that generalizations

The great majority of the states have under 12 percent non-whites in their large-city metropolitan populations. This measure of course does not account for the variation in percent across cities or the percent in cities of less than 100,000, but it does show that most large metropolitan cities have a smaller percentage of non-whites than might be expected. The variation in per-pupil aid within these states suggests that the variable has little bearing on the level of state aid.

When the influence of non-whites on metropolitan relative advantage is examined in Figure V-14, the pattern is again inconclusive. Among states with even 12 percent non-whites in large metropolitan cities, only Alabama provides as much metropolitan per-pupil aid as it does to non-metropolitan school districts. New York again stands out among the states with less than 12 percent.

Finally, when the non-white metropolitan population in large cities is related to the percent change in metropolitan per-pupil aid in Figure V-15, the overall relationship is generaally weak (.062). The six states with the highest proportion of non-whites in large metropolitan cities are fairly similar in their amount of change. Florida shows the greatest increase, followed by New York, Arizona and, surprisingly, New Jersey, considering its still low metropolitan per-pupil aid. When the six states with the largest percentage of non-whites are factored out, the pattern is generally in the hypothesized direction. Still, the dispersion is so great and the cases so limited, that generalizations as to the influence of the special educational

needs of urban non-white
must be considered only
If the level an
the socio-economic char
itan populations, then
in aid patterns. The r
changes in state aid is
seen in Figure V-16, th
esized: i.e., the stat
are those with the leas
two major exceptions t
set the negative relat
Increases in p
politan relative advan
hypothesized gains in
New Jersey were more t
Alabama, Nevada, and A
either population or r
remaining states. In
associated with eithe
tricts, or with impro
metropolitan district
The final soc
to state aid patterns
As can be seen in Tab

needs of urban non-whites on any of the three measures of state aid must be considered only tentative and preliminary.

If the level and distribution of state aid are a function of the socio-economic characteristics and educational needs of metropolitan populations, then changes in the population should produce changes in aid patterns. The relationship between changes in population and changes in state aid is presented in Figures V-16 and V-17. As can be seen in Figure V-16, the overall pattern is opposite from that hypothesized: i.e., the states showing the greatest increase in population are those with the least increase in metropolitan per-pupil aid. The two major exceptions to this pattern, Arizona and Florida, do not offset the negative relationship between the variables (r = -.277).

Increases in population also had a negligible effect on metropolitan relative advantage (r = .114). As shown in Figure V-17, the hypothesized gains in relative advantage of Maryland, California, and New Jersey were more than offset by states such as New York, Idaho, Alabama, Nevada, and Arizona, and by the general lack of change in either population or metropolitan relative advantage by most of the remaining states. In sum, changes in population were not significantly associated with either the level of aid to metropolitan school districts, or with improvements in their position relative to non-metropolitan districts.

The final social-demographic measure to be examined in relation to state aid patterns is the percent of students in public schools. As can be seen in Table V-1, the variation across states is considerable,

Percent of

1.
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
9.
10.
11.
12.
13
14
15
16
17
18
1
2
2
2

TABLE V-1

Percent of Students Attending Public Schools
in 1967, Ranked

1.	North Carolina	98.29
2.	Utah	97.79
3.	South Carolina	97.50
4.	Georgia	97.39
5.	Arkansas	97.29
6.	Alabama	96.50
7.	Tennessee	96.29
8.	Nevada	96.20
9.	West Virginia	95.79
10.	Idaho	94.70
11.	Florida	93.00
12.	Oregon	92.79
13.	Washington	92.59
14.	Arizona	91.70
15.	California	91.20
16.	New Mexico	90.29
17.	Kentucky	87.50
18.	Michigan	85.00
19.	Maryland	84.50
20.	Louisiana	84.29
21.	Connecticut	83.20
22.	New Jersey	80.59
23.	New York	78.29
24.	Pennsylvania	77.39
25.	Wisconsin	76.50
26.	Rhode Island	73.89

ranging from 73.89 percer
Carolina in 1969. The me
standard deviation of 7.
demand on public school
those with the least dem
Northeast. The proporti
is primarily a function
who send their children
concentrated in the met
of the metropolitan pop
will be the need for ar
in turn should increas
aid.

Figure V-18 sh
dents in public school
overall relationship i
patterns are apparent
hand corner of the fi
show an increasing le
in the percent of pup
highest metropolitan
a low percent of stu
also have a higher l
on their public scho
of the large and sp

ranging from 73.89 percent in Rhode Island to 98.2 percent in North Carolina in 1969. The mean for all states is 89.64 percent, with a standard deviation of 7.64 percent. The states with the greatest demand on public school facilities are generally in the South, while those with the least demand are mainly in the industrial states of the Northeast. The proportion of students attending non-public schools is primarily a function of the immigrant and foreign stock population, who send their children to parochial schools. These groups are largely concentrated in the metropolitan centers. The greater the proportion of the metropolitan population attending public schools, the greater will be the need for and demand upon public school facilities. This in turn should increase both the amount and the distribution of state aid.

Figure V-18 shows the relationship between the percent of students in public schools and metropolitan per-pupil aid. Although the overall relationship is not strong ($\underline{r}$ = .101), several clear subpatterns are apparent. When the southern states in the upper left-hand corner of the figure are not considered, the remaining states show an increasing level of metropolitan per-pupil aid, with increases in the percent of pupils. New York, again the exception, has the highest metropolitan per-pupil aid of any state in the study, despite a low percent of students in public schools. Michigan and Pennsylvania also have a higher level of metropolitan per-pupil aid than the burden on their public school facilities would suggest, both perhaps because of the large and specialized educational needs of their central city

populations. The remain

hypothesis.

When the relatio

public schools and the r

Figure V-19, the same pa

correlation is stronger

in the hypothesized dir

the southern states are

the hypothesis that met

of students attending p

Political Variables an

The third set

parison with the metro

Certainly metropolitan

of the state's politic

to education. Three

expenditure levels in

electoral turn-out, a

revenues contributed

iables and state aid

section.

Party Competi

has been one of the

American state poli

populations. The remainder of the states give support to the basic hypothesis.

When the relationship between the percent of students in public schools and the metropolitan relative advantage is examined in Figure V-19, the same pattern is even more pronounced. The overall correlation is stronger (r = .230), and the regression line is clearly in the hypothesized direction when the deviant cases of New York and the southern states are removed. The data, in sum, offer support for the hypothesis that metropolitan state aid is related to the percent of students attending public schools.

Political Variables and State Aid

The third set of explanatory variables to be examined in comparison with the metropolitan power measure are political in nature. Certainly metropolitan legislative power is not the only characteristic of the state's political system that is likely to influence state aid to education. Three variables that have been shown to influence state expenditure levels in different functional areas are party competition, electoral turn-out, and "local reliance," or the proportion of total revenues contributed by the state. The relationship between these variables and state aid to education will be examined in the following section.

Party Competition: As noted in Chapter II, party competition has been one of the major explanatory concepts used in the study of American state politics. A number of different measures of party

competition have been de

the Ranney Index, which

figures over a twenty-y

1. The average per
   cratic gubernat
2. The average per
   held by Democra
3. The average per
   of representati
4. The percent of
   the House in wh

To the extent that stat

expenditure, long-term

of state aid to metrop

Interpreting t

state aid measures wil

iables in the study si

As shown in Table V-2,

South Carolina at .965

range is greater, part

pretation of the Inde

above are considered

modified one-party De

petitive; and .1000 t

Since none of the sta

we would expect to s

.6999 range than in

greater than the .90

competition have been developed. One of the most frequently used is the Ranney Index, which is based on the average of the following figures over a twenty-year period:

1. The average percent of the popular vote won by Democratic gubernatorial candidates.
2. The average percent of seats in the state senate held by Democrats.
3. The average percent of seats in the state house of representatives held by Democrats.
4. The percent of all terms for Governor, Senator, and the House in which Democrats had control.

To the extent that state aid to education is a "political" type of expenditure, long-term party competition should be related to the level of state aid to metropolitan school districts.

Interpreting the relationship between the Ranney Index and state aid measures will be different from the other independent variables in the study since the Index is not cumulative or uni-dimensional. As shown in Table V-2, the values for states in the sample range from South Carolina at .9659 to Idaho at .3723.[3] For all fifty states, the range is greater, particularly at the lower end of the scale. Interpretation of the Index is as follows: States with scores of .9000 and above are considered one-part Democratic; .7000 through .8999 are modified one-party Democratic; .3000 through .6999 are two-party competitive; and .1000 through .2999 are modified one-part Republican. Since none of the states in the sample fall below .3000 on the scale, we would expect to see greater levels of aid in states in the .3000 to .6999 range than in the .7000 to .8999 range, which in turn should be greater than the .9000+ range. This in fact the case. The mean for

1.
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50

Ranney

TABLE V-2

Ranney Index of Party Competition, Ranked

1.	South Carolina	.96590
2.	Georgia	.96290
3.	Louisiana	.96120
4.	Alabama	.95290
5.	Arkansas	.90950
6.	Tennessee	.86910
7.	Florida	.86880
8.	North Carolina	.86050
9.	Kentucky	.75370
10.	Maryland	.74160
11.	New Mexico	.71120
12.	West Virginia	.69980
13.	Arizona	.66040
14.	Rhode Island	.61310
15.	Washington	.57940
16.	Nevada	.57150
17.	California	.54140
18.	Connecticut	.53030
19.	New Jersey	.48610
20.	Oregon	.45850
21.	Pennsylvania	.44260
22.	Michigan	.41990
23.	Utah	.41350
24.	New York	.38490
25.	Wisconsin	.37980
26.	Idaho	.37230

the two-party states is

states it is $294.60; a

$260.60. As can be see

pupil aid within each c

clear pattern of higher

the .5000 through .599

When the relati

relative advantage is

tern emerges. Two-par

advantage (94.9) than

(86.1) or the one-part

competitive states are

category.

The relationsh

politan per-pupil aid

in Figures V-22 and V-

present. The mean cha

modified one-party Dem

states (98.1 percent)

percent). The mean c

modified one-party De

because of Florida th

(101.0 percent) or th

In sum, it ca

tively related to lon

the two-party states is $312.10; for the modified one-party Democratic states it is $294.60; and for the one-party Democratic states it is $260.60. As can be seen in Figure V-20, however, the ranges of per-pupil aid within each of these categories is considerable, and no clear pattern of higher aid in the most competitive states (those in the .5000 through .5999 range) is apparent.

When the relationship between the Ranney Index and metropolitan relative advantage is examined in Figure V-21, a somewhat similar pattern emerges. Two-party states have a higher metropolitan relative advantage (94.9) than either the modified one-party Democratic states (86.1) or the one-party Democratic states (86.4). But again, the most competitive states are not distinctive from others in the two-party category.

The relationship between the Ranney Index and changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid and metropolitan relative advantage are presented in Figures V-22 and V-23. As can be seen, no distinctive pattern is present. The mean change in metropolitan per-pupil aid for both the modified one-party Democratic states (83.6 percent) and the one-party states (98.1 percent) is greater than for the two-party states (67.4 percent). The mean change in metropolitan relative advantage for modified one-party Democratic states is greater (252.6 percent) largely because of Florida than for either the one-party Democratic states (101.0 percent) or the competitive two-party states (176.1 percent).

In sum, it can be said that the levels of state aid are positively related to long-term party competition using the Ranney Index,

but that the distribut

parent relationship to

A second, more

is the relative streng

adopting the state aid

culated by taking the

crats in the 1967 legi

legislative seats and

for the twenty-six sta

Unlike the Ran

cumulative, or uni-dir

the greater the level

lations in determinin

Figure V-24 p

tition and 1969 metro

not strong (r = .295)

eral patterns can be

figure and the one be

the right, the states

seen in the Ranney In

state, in 1967 was a

and Kentucky, all mod

Index, were among the

high competition and

three states, plus W

but that the distribution and patterns of change in aid have no apparent relationship to party competition.

A second, more direct and useful measure of party competition is the relative strength of the two parties in the legislature actually adopting the state aid formulas being studied. This measure was calculated by taking the difference between the Republicans and the Democrats in the 1967 legislature as a proportion of the total number of legislative seats and subtracting this figure from one. The values for the twenty-six states in the sample are presented in Table V-3.

Unlike the Ranney measure, the party competition measure has cumulative, or uni-dimensional values; that is, the higher the score, the greater the level of competition. This permits the use of correlations in determining the degree of association.

Figure V-24 presents the relationship between 1967 part competition and 1969 metropolitan per-pupil aid. The correlation, although not strong ($\underline{r}$ = .295) is in the hypothesized direction. Although several patterns can be seen in the group of states at the bottom of the figure and the one beginning with New Jersey and extending upward to the right, the states in the two groups are not the distinctive groups seen in the Ranney Index. Utah, normally a competitive two-party state, in 1967 was a strongly one-party state, while Florida, Tennessee and Kentucky, all modified one-party Democratic states in the Ranney Index, were among the most competitive in 1967. The combination of high competition and low metropolitan relative advantage in these three states, plus Wisconsin, Nevada and Pennsylvania, points up the

19

1.
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
9.
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
1
2
2
2
2
2

TABLE V-3

1967 Party Competition, Ranked

1.	California	.97
2.	Michigan	.96
3.	Pennsylvania	.94
4.	New York	.93
5.	Arizona	.92
6.	Nevada	.91
7.	Washington	.87
8.	Tennessee	.87
9.	Wisconsin	.84
10.	Kentucky	.83
11.	Idaho	.80
12.	New Mexico	.76
13.	Florida	.74
14.	Oregon	.73
15.	Connecticut	.64
16.	Rhode Island	.62
17.	West Virginia	.61
18.	New Jersey	.51
19.	Alabama	.49
20.	Maryland	.36
21.	North Carolina	.35
22.	Utah	.32
23.	South Carolina	.27
24.	Georgia	.26
25.	Louisiana	.03
26.	Arkansas	.03

role of other variables

aid patterns.

When party comp

tive advantage in Figu

strong (r = .321). Th

Among the non-competit

is a clear pattern of

Among a second set of

Jersey and extending t

creasing competition a

third group, the most

metropolitan relative

consin's .68 to New Y

Interpreting

that short-term chan

creates temporary al

tricts. A second ex

operates on the stat

ables and must there

pre-condition for a

In sum, whil

of aid is influence

tition had an impac

neither relationshi

tions. Any support

role of other variables besides party competition in explaining state aid patterns.

When party competition is plotted against metropolitan relative advantage in Figure V-25, the relationship is again moderately strong (r = .321). Three patterns are apparent in these figures. Among the non-competitive states at the bottom of the figure, there is a clear pattern of increasing metropolitan relative advantage. Among a second set of more competitive states, beginning with New Jersey and extending through Oregon, the pattern is also one of increasing competition and metropolitan relative advantage. Among the third group, the most competitive states, however, the variation in metropolitan relative advantage is considerable, ranging from Wisconsin's .68 to New York's 1.28.

Interpreting these patterns is difficult. One explanation is that short-term changes in the general level of state party competition creates temporary alignments favorable to metropolitan school districts. A second explanation, already noted, is that party competition operates on the state aid formula only in conjunction with other variables and must therefore be considered a necessary but insufficient pre-condition for a high metropolitan relative advantage.

In sum, while there is some indication that the long-term level of aid is influenced by party competition, and that 1967 party competition had an impact on the amount and the distribution of aid in 1969, neither relationship is strong enough to warrant any firm generalizations. Any support for the hypothesis that party competition

stimulated state aid to

considered tentative a

Electoral Turn

make legislatures more

more receptive to high

level of participation

turnout has been found

penditures in other fu

should also be related

the level of metropol

of participation is t

percentage of the pop

1962 and 1970.[4] Figu

the Milbrath Index pa

The most dist

in the participation

The former are all be

.40. This difference

state aid measures b

high levels of parti

levels of participat

Except for a

lower levels of supp

higher levels of par

data. The correlat

stimulated state aid to metropolitan school districts must therefore be considered tentative and incomplete.

Electoral Turnout: Just as party competition in theory should make legislatures more responsive to community educational needs and more receptive to high educational expenditures, so also does a high level of participation make them more constituent-oriented. Electoral turnout has been found to be positively associated with state aid expenditures in other functional areas. It follows that participation should also be related to the levels of metropolitan per-pupil aid and the level of metropolitan relative advantage. A frequently used level of participation is the Milbrath Index, which is based on the average percentage of the population voting for Senator and Governor between 1962 and 1970.[4] Figures V-26 through V-29 plot the association between the Milbrath Index participation and the four measures of state aid.

The most distinctive features of these tables is the difference in the participation patterns of the southern and non-southern states. The former are all below .30 on the scale, and the latter are all above .40. This difference has no clear relationship to any of the four state aid measures being examined. The spread in the aid figures among high levels of participation is just as great as for states with low levels of participation.

Except for a slight tendency among non-southern states to have lower levels of support and less change than among the states with the higher levels of participation, no clear sub-patterns emerged from the data. The correlations between the Milbrath Index and the aid measures

are all low: Metropoli

Advantage (.190), chang

changes in Metropolitan

must be that long-term

amount, the distributio

cation.

As with party

term and long-term pat

tionship between the g

measures of state aid.

Milbraith Index ($\underline{r}$ = -

Metropolitan Relative

participation, short-

on state aid to educa

Proportion of

political measure to

enues contributed by

educational finance

levels of aid and to

needs and changing c

relative to local sc

Figure V-32

total public school

The overall relatio

of states follow al

pothesized directio

are all low: Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid (.080), Metropolitan Relative Advantage (.190), changes in Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid (-.215), and changes in Metropolitan Relative Advantage (-.016). The conclusion must be that long-term levels of participation do not influence the amount, the distribution, or the amount of change in state aid to education.

As with party competition, participation involves both short-term and long-term patterns. Figures V-30 and V-31 present the relationship between the gubernatorial vote nearest to 1968 and the two measures of state aid. The relationship is no stronger than for the Milbraith Index (r = -.152 for Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid and .074 for Metropolitan Relative Advantage). The conclusion must be again that participation, short-term or long-term, has little apparent influence on state aid to education.

Proportion of Revenues Contributed by the State: The final political measure to be examined is the percentage of education revenues contributed by the state.[5] States having a greater stake in educational finance in policy making can be expected to provide higher levels of aid and to be more responsive to specialized educational needs and changing conditions than states with a relatively small role relative to local school districts.

Figure V-32 plots the relationship between the state percent of total public school revenues for 1969 and Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid. The overall relationship is relatively strong (r = .339). The majority of states follow along a clearly defined regression line in the hypothesized direction. Still, the range of Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid

at different levels of

states providing over 6

is considerable. This

more detailed analysis

Oregon both seem to be

both providing consider

ing their proportional

pupil aid relative to

nantly southern states

Carolina.

The relationsh

tures and the Metropol

Although not as strong

in the hypothesized d

advantage rather than

Georgia being the onl

itan aid relative to

When the stat

ropolitan per-Pupil A

pattern is visible.

of variables shown i

showed the greatest

a high involvement i

change. The greates

40 and 50 percent o

three states contri

at different levels of state involvement, particularly among the states providing over 60 percent of the total educational revenues, is considerable. This variation is difficult to explain without a more detailed analysis of local expenditure patterns. New York and Oregon both seem to be the states being most deviant from the pattern, both providing considerably more aid than would be expected considering their proportional contribution. States with low levels of per-pupil aid relative to their proportional contribution are predominantly southern states--Georgia, Alabama, Kentucky, Arkansas, North Carolina.

The relationship between the state percent of total expenditures and the Metropolitan Relative Advantage is seen in Figure V-33. Although not as strong (r = .128), the relationship is still clear and in the hypothesized direction. Deviant states in this case tend to advantage rather than disadvantage metropolitan school districts, Georgia being the only state significantly disadvantaged in metropolitan aid relative to its proportional contribution.

When the state contribution is plotted against changes in Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid and Metropolitan Relative Advantage, no clear pattern is visible. The relationship between the first of these sets of variables shown in Figure V-34 is weak (r = -.029). Although Florida showed the greatest increase in aid, the remainder of the states with a high involvement in educational financing showed relatively little change. The greatest change occurred in states contributing between 40 and 50 percent of the total educational revenues and also among the three states contributing the least. When Florida's high degree of

change (explained earl

and Nevada, Connecticu

plained respectively i

established progressiv

ysis, the pattern is

in the state contribu

When state pe

in Metropolitan Relat

relationship in relat

the distribution of s

in the financing of

(.027) and generaliz

is clear. In combin

state aid, it sugges

financing are more p

ones in response to

The failure of many

raise new revenues

that education is n

The Explanatory Pow the Control Variabl

The regres

Chapter V are pres

Table V-4, several

the variance of lo

change (explained earlier in terms of its tradition of malapportionment) and Nevada, Connecticut and California's low amount of change (explained respectively in terms of local wealth, localism and already established progressive state aid policies) are removed from the analysis, the pattern is clearly toward decreasing changes with increases in the state contribution.

When state percent of the total aid is plotted against changes in Metropolitan Relative Advantage in Figure V-35, it is seen that the relationship in relatively few states showing significant changes in the distribution of state aid did so in direct proportion to their role in the financing of education. While the overall correlation is low (.027) and generalizations from five or six states risky, the pattern is clear. In combination with the pattern for changes in the amount of state aid, it suggests that states with a strong stake in educational financing are more prepared to redistribute revenues than to raise new ones in response to the growing educational needs of metropolitan areas. The failure of many highly urbanized and industrialized states to either raise new revenues or to redistribute existing revenues also suggests that education is not high on the priority list of state legislatures.

The Explanatory Power of the Control Variables

The regression statistics for the variables discussed in Chapter V are presented in Tables V-4 through V-7. As can be seen in Table V-4, several of the variables explain a significant portion of the variance of 1969 Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid. The tax burden

Regression
19

Economic Variables	
PERSINC	
BURDEN	
Social/Demographic Va	
METPOP	
LGCTYPOP	
NONWHITE	
PCTPUB	
Political Variables	
RANNEY	
PTYCOMP	
MILBRATH	
GOV	
STPCT	

TABLE V-4

Regression Statistics for Control Variables and
1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

	b	F	P > F	r^2
Economic Variables				
PERSINC	.013	.059	.806	.002
BURDEN	68.99	6.24	.019	.206
Social/Demographic Variables				
METPOP	.008	2.23	1.45	.085
LGCTYPOP	.024	5.65	.024	.190
NONWHITE	-2.40	1.82	.187	.071
PCTPUB	1.52	.250	.627	.010
Political Variables				
RANNEY	-.002	.050	.819	.002
PTYCOMP	116.03	2.28	.140	.087
MILBRATH	-.050	.155	.699	.006
GOV	-.001	.568	.536	.023
STPCT	.309	3.13	.086	.115

Regressio
1969

Economic Variables	
PERSINC	
BURDEN	
Social/Demographic Va	
METPOP	
LGCTYPOP	
NONWHITE	
PCTPUB	
Political Variables	
RANNEY	
PTYCOMP	
MILBRATH	
GOV	
STPCT	

TABLE V-5

Regression Statistics for Control Variables and
1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

	b	F	P > F	r^2
Economic Variables				
PERSINC	.003	.164	.691	.007
BURDEN	6.70	2.62	.115	.098
Social/Demographic Variables				
METPOP	-.037	.006	.795	.003
LGCTYPOP	.075	.226	.643	.009
NONWHITE	-.397	2.59	.116	.097
PCTPUB	.484	1.34	.257	.053
Political Variables				
RANNEY	-.001	1.48	.233	.058
PTYCOMP	17.77	2.75	.106	.103
MILBRATH	.017	.901	.646	.036
GOV	.000	.133	.719	.006
STPCT	.016	.397	.541	.016

	Regressio
	Percent I
Social/Demographic	
LGCTYPOP	
NONWHITE	
CGINC	
CGPOP	
Political Variables	
RANNEY	
MILBRATH	

TABLE V-6

Regression Statistics for Control Variables and Percent Increase in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

	b	F	P > F	r^2
Social/Demographic				
LGCTYPOP	.032	.800	.616	.032
NONWHITE	1.86	.094	.759	.003
CGINC	.823	1.73	.197	.067
CGPOP	-.677	1.13	.298	.044
Political Variables				
RANNEY	-.002	.005	.942	.000
MILBRATH	-.445	1.162	.292	.046

	Regression St Increase
Social/Demographic	
LGCTYPOP	
NONWHITE	
CGINC	
CGPOP	
Political Variables	
RANNEY	
MILBRATH	

TABLE V-7

Regression Statistics for Control Variables and Percent Increase in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969

	b	F	P > F	r^2
Social/Demographic				
LGCTYPOP	.056	9.20	.006	.277
NONWHITE				
CGINC	.131	.122	.729	.005
CGPOP	.212	.318	.584	.013
Political Variables				
RANNEY	-.008	.164	.691	.007
MILBRATH	-.020	.007	.934	.000

accounts for 20.6 perc
that the limited range
is at least partially
nificance level of the
sive. Among the soci
itan city population
of the variance in th
significant at .024.
of educational revenu
10 percent in the var

When the impa
Relative Advantage is
petition is the only
plain even 10 percen
the percent non-whit
imately 10 percent.
nificantly more of t

When the fou
regressed against ch
and 1969, as shown
poor explanatory pow
powerful variable a

Increases i
tricts between 1961
by the population i
variable alone acco

accounts for 20.6 percent of the variance, although it should be noted that the limited range of the variable from 3.2 percent to 6.5 percent is at least partially responsible for the high value.[6] The high significance level of the variable, however (.019), is clear and impressive. Among the social-demographic variables, the 1960 large metropolitan city population is clearly the most useful, explaining 19 percent of the variance in the Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid and being highly significant at .024. Among the political variables the state percent of educational revenues is the only one able to account for more than 10 percent in the variance of Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid.

When the impact of the control variables on 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage is examined in Table V-5, it is seen that party competition is the only one of the eleven control variables able to explain even 10 percent of the variance. The tax burden variable and the percent non-white in large metropolitan cities also explain approximately 10 percent. Again, no single group of variables explains significantly more of the variance than the others.

When the four control variables discussed in the chapter are regressed against changes in Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid between 1962 and 1969, as shown in Table V-6, it is seen that they have uniformly poor explanatory power. The Milbrath Participation Index is the most powerful variable and it explains only 4-1/2 percent of the variance.

Increases in the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts between 1961 and 1969, on the other hand, are largely explained by the population in metropolitan areas living in large cities. This variable alone accounts for almost 30 percent of the variance in changes

of metropolitan relati

chapter when it is con

of variation, it accou

The two depend

in explaining are cha

1962 and 1969, and 19

apportionment variabl

measure than any of t

ings challenge the co

ment that show apport

policy choices.

Before any f

cance of the present

explanatory power of

tion rather than jus

of metropolitan relative advantage, and, as will be seen in the next chapter when it is combined with changes in the inverted coefficient of variation, it accounts for almost half of the total variance.

The two dependent variables that the model is most successful in explaining are changes in Metropolitan Relative Advantage between 1962 and 1969, and 1969 Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid. In both cases, an apportionment variable accounts for more of the variation in the aid measure than any of the other independent variables tested. Such findings challenge the conclusions of most of the literature on apportionment that show apportionment systems to have no influence on state policy choices.

Before any final conclusions can be drawn as to the significance of the present findings, it is important to examine the overall explanatory power of the model, using all of the variables in combination rather than just one at a time. This will be done in Chapter VI.

[1]The same bas
is therefore omitted
Metropolitan Relative

[2]These figure
of the States, 1970
1971), p. 76.

[3]These values
Ranney figures throu
worth and presented
Communities (New Yor

[4]These value
found in his article
tics in the American
1972).

[5]This measur
It is treated as a
variable because the
portion of education
as an independent ra
state role is the re
context it has poten
distribution of per-

[6]Also note
betas in a multiple
cross-products, suc

a small range in th
similarly high beta
where the values ra

CHAPTER V

Notes

[1]The same basic relationship was found for 1960 and 1962 and is therefore omitted here, as is the figure for personal income and Metropolitan Relative Advantage.

[2]These figures are found in Research Report 1970-R1, Rankings of the States, 1970 (Washington, D.C.: National Education Association, 1971), p. 76.

[3]These values were drawn from an updating of the original Ranney figures through 1968 by Hugh L. LeBlanc and D. Trudeau Allensworth and presented in their book, The Politics of States and Urban Communities (New York: Harper and Row, 1970).

[4]These values are taken from an updated version of the index found in his article in Herbert Jacob and Kenneth Vines (eds.), Politics in the American States, Second Edition (Boston: Little, Brown, 1972).

[5]This measure is taken from Ranking of the States, 1970, p. 45. It is treated as a political, rather than as an economic or demographic, variable because the legislature determines from year to year what proportion of educational revenues will come from the state. It is treated as an independent rather than a dependent variable because while the state role is the result of a variety of other factors, in the present context it has potentially important implications for the level and distribution of per-pupil aid.

[6]Also note the high beta coefficient this produces. Since the betas in a multiple regression are calculated by taking a ratio of the cross-products, such as

$$\frac{b_{12} - (b_{13})\ (b_{23})}{1 - (b_{23})\ (b_{32})} = b_{12.3}$$

a small range in the denominator will produce a high beta value. A similarly high beta value is seen with the party competition variable, where the values range from .00 to .99.

THE CUM

Having examin

aid measures and a se

Chapters III through

on these findings and

possible variance in

will be to combine th

vious chapters into

each of the dependen

Three tables

sents the R^2 value f

gression statistics

table presents the

nation procedure," a

with all variables

inates, one at a ti

to the variance in

in the equation hav

The final t

each of the variabl

CHAPTER VI

THE CUMULATIVE EXPLANATORY POWER OF THE MODEL

Having examined the bivariate relationships between the state aid measures and a series of apportionment and control variables in Chapters III through V, we are now in a position to draw selectively on these findings and develop a model that will explain the maximum possible variance in each of the state aid measures. The procedure will be to combine the variables discussed individually in the previous chapters into four separate multiple regression models, one for each of the dependent variables being examined.

Three tables will be presented for each model. The first presents the R^2 value for each of the variables in the model and the regression statistics for the variable with the highest R^2. The second table presents the results of a technique called the "backward elimination procedure," a form of stepwise multiple regression which begins with all variables included in the regression equation. It then eliminates, one at a time, the variable in the equation contributing least to the variance in the dependent variable, until all of the variables in the equation have a significance level of .10 or less.

The final table will present the regression statistics for each of the variables in the model.

In addition to

variables, a correlati

sectional and longitu

effects of multicolin

Explaining Patterns o in State Aid

Table VI-1 pr

efficients for the va

seen, most of the co

variance in the depe

variables is largely

other independent va

are underlined and w

findings.

Changes in

the coefficients of

in the model. The

income between 1958

cent of the varianc

significance (P = .

than one percent o

change in income a

When the r

amined in Table VI

the model is 27.53

In addition to the three tables for each of the four dependent variables, a correlation matrix will be presented for the cross-sectional and longitudinal models in order to examine the possible effects of multicolinearity on the findings.

Explaining Patterns of Change in State Aid

Table VI-1 presents the simple product-moment correlation coefficients for the variables included in the change model. As can be seen, most of the correlations are relatively low, which means that variance in the dependent variable explained by any of the independent variables is largely unique and not the result of interaction with other independent variables. All correlations in the matrix above .40 are underlined and will be duly noted in the interpretation of the findings.

Changes in Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid--Table VI-2--presents the coefficients of multiple determination for each of the variables in the model. The "best" variable, Change in per-capita personal income between 1958 and 1968 (CGINC), is seen to explain only 6.7 percent of the variance, and to have a relatively low level of statistical significance (P = .198). Only five of the nine variables explain more than one percent of the variance, and the two that explain the most--change in income and the Milbrath Index--are highly correlated at -.662.

When the results of the backward elimination procedure are examined in Table VI-3, it is seen that the total variance explained by the model is 27.53 percent, and that every variable in the model is

TABLE VI-1

Correlation Matrix for Variables in State Aid

	CHGICV	PERSINC	BURDEN	CHGINC	LGCTYPOP	CHGPOP	NON-WHITE	PCTPUB	MILBRATH	CHGMPPA	CHGMRA

TABLE VI-1

Correlation Matrix for Variables in State Aid

	CHGICV	PERSINC	BURDEN	CHGINC	LGCTYPOP	CHGPOP	NON-WHITE	PCTPUB	MILBRATH	CHGMPPA	CHGMRA
CHGICV											
PERSINC	.161										
BURDEN	.010	.005									
CHGINC	-.060	-.315	-.532								
LGCTYPOP	-.034	.504	.040	-.067							
CHGPOP	-.598	.395	.247	-.170	-.062						
NON-WHITE	.245	-.211	-.379	.507	-.007	-.042					
PCTPUB	.174	-.588	.170	.131	-.389	.259	.086				
MILBRATH	-.220	.560	.175	-.662	.137	.000	-.695	-.397			
CHGMPPA	.027	-.092	-.006	.259	.179	.211	.062	-.165	-.214		
CHGMRA	.450	.278	-.077	-.071	.526	.114	.074	-.141	-.016	.419	

TABLE VI - 2

Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.00004248	BURDEN
1	0.00075209	CGICV

TABLE VI - 2

Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables
in Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.00004248	BURDEN
1	0.00075209	CGICV
1	0.00390136	NONWHITE
1	0.00857468	PERSINC
1	0.02745095	PCTPUB
1	0.03225441	LGCTYPOP
1	0.04493361	CGPOP
1	0.04619805	MILBRATH
1	0.06745010	CGINC

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 1 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MINIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	1	237476.31436630	237476.31436630	1.73589	0.1976	0.06745010	42.19298 %
ERROR	24	3283293.83947986	136803.90997833				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	3520770.15384616					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
CGINC	1	237476.31436630	1.73589	0.1976	237476.31436630	1.73589	0.1976

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	332.76223607				
CGINC	0.82325232	1.31753	0.1976	0.62484467	0.25971158

TABLE VI - 3

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable
Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.27534213	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
8	0.27230787	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB CGICV CGPOP CGINC
		NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB CGICV CGPOP CGINC

TABLE VI - 3

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable
Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.27534213	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
8	0.27230787	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB CGICV CGPOP CGINC
7	0.26081314	NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB CGICV CGPOP CGINC
6	0.24497036	NONWHITE BURDEN PCTPUB CGICV CGPOP CGINC
5	0.23145650	BURDEN PCTPUB CGICV CGPOP CGINC
4	0.18002615	BURDEN CGICV CGPOP CGINC
3	0.13281811	BURDEN CGPOP CGINC
2	0.09639716	CGPOP CGINC
1	0.06745010	CGINC
0	0.00000000	

ALL VARIABLES HAVE BEEN DEEMED INSIGNIFICANT AT THE 0.1000 SIGNIFICANCE LEVEL

eventually eliminated

Finally, the low R^2 c

tistical significance

findings. The conclu

budgetary increases

of interacting force

tical explanation, o

developing the model

the concluding chapt

Changes in M

siderably more effec

advantage between 19

largely due to two

Variation (CGICV),

politan cities in 1

percent of the vari

districts relative

Table VI-6

ables significant

population, the pe

cities, and the ed

tant variables in

and are influenced

In Table

but two major var

eventually eliminated, none being significant at even the .10 level. Finally, the low R^2 of the model, combined with its low level of statistical significance, as shown in Table VI-4, reinforces the previous findings. The conclusion to be drawn from these data is that either budgetary increases in state aid are the result of a complex network of interacting forces that is not amenable to quantitative and statistical explanation, or that several key variables have been ignored in developing the model. Some comments along these lines will be made in the concluding chapter.

Changes in Metropolitan Relative Advantage: The model is considerably more effective in explaining changes in metropolitan relative advantage between 1962 and 1969. As shown in Table VI-5, this is largely due to two variables: Change in the Inverted Coefficient of Variation (CGICV), and the size of the population living in large metropolitan cities in 1960 (LGCTYPOP). Together they explain almost 48 percent of the variance in the aid increases in metropolitan school districts relative to non-metropolitan districts.

Table VI-6 shows that these two variables are the only variables significant at the .10 level. Percent increases in the state population, the percent of non-whites living in large metropolitan cities, and the educational tax burden are the next three most important variables in the model, although they contribute only marginally and are influenced to some extent by multicollinearity problems.

In Table VI-7, the relatively high significance levels of all but two major variables is shown, as well as the high overall

TABLE VI - 4

Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for
Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.27534213	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 9 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MAXIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

TABLE VI - 4

Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.27534213	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 9 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MAXIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	9	969416.34769896	107712.92752211	0.67549	0.7210	0.27534213	45.55292 %
ERROR	16	2551353.80614719	159459.61288420				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	3520770.15384616					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
CGINC	1	237476.31436630	1.48926	0.2386	160196.00120865	1.00462	0.3327
PCTPUB	1	143153.82273076	0.89774	0.6401	123040.47110472	0.77161	0.6033
BURDEN	1	174225.32642012	1.09260	0.3123	97813.84170677	0.61341	0.5494
PERSINC	1	77190.11905266	0.48407	0.5029	10682.91490253	0.06699	0.7943
LGCTYPOP	1	105908.76458766	0.66417	0.5678	49532.12989128	0.31062	0.5909
CGICV	1	104361.03728847	0.65447	0.5644	163769.64899942	1.02703	0.3273
NONWHITE	1	70707.14776397	0.44342	0.5213	86206.68223475	0.54062	0.5210
CGPOP	1	36750.03155718	0.23047	0.6421	51520.56425796	0.32309	0.5836
MILBRATH	1	19643.78393184	0.12319	0.7295	19643.78393184	0.12319	0.7295

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > ITI	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	1366.37099035	1.00231	0.3327	1.17875047	0.37271830
CGINC	1.18146909	-0.87841	0.6033	17.75429327	-0.31763493
PCTPUB	-15.59559790	0.78320	0.5494	149.11149684	0.23391357
BURDEN	116.78469621	-0.25883	0.7943	0.34347779	-0.14725095
PERSINC	-0.08890336	0.55734	0.5909	0.05406428	0.16414716
LGCTYPOP	0.03013204	1.01342	0.3273	0.00366729	0.30063840
CGICV	0.00371652	-0.73527	0.5210	10.24429966	-0.25329265
NONWHITE	-7.53229614	-0.56841	0.5836	1.38286821	-0.24595580
CGPOP	-0.78604199	-0.35098	0.7295	1.09258030	-0.18500615
MILBRATH	-0.38347812				

TABLE VI - 5

Coefficients of Multiple Determination For Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.00027558	MILBRAIN
	0.00508505	CGINC

TABLE VI - 5

Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.00027558	MILBRATH
1	0.00508505	CGINC
1	0.00556312	NONWHITE
1	0.00594119	BURDEN
1	0.01307677	CGPOP
1	0.02003085	PCIPUB
1	0.07731696	PERSINC
1	0.20250217	CGICV
1	0.27708063	LGCTYPOP

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 1 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MINIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	1	331090.33378524	331090.33378524	9.19872	0.0058	0.27708063	105.62481 %
ERROR	24	863833.82006091	35993.07583587				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	1194924.15384615					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
LGCTYPOP	1	331090.33378524	9.19872	0.0058	331090.33378524	9.19872	0.0058

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > ITI	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	111.65316170				
LGCTYPOP	0.05629238	3.03294	0.0058	0.01856034	0.52638449

TABLE VI - 6

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.54524028	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
8	0.54511459	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
		[illegible] NONWHITE BURDEN PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC

TABLE VI - 6

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable
Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.54524028	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
8	0.54511459	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
7	0.54451927	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE BURDEN PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC
6	0.54133608	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE BURDEN PERSINC CGICV CGPOP
5	0.53833005	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE BURDEN CGICV CGPOP
4	0.53021128	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE CGICV CGPOP
3	0.52375620	LGCTYPOP CGICV CGPOP
2	0.49647459	LGCTYPOP CGICV

THE VARIABLES IN THE ABOVE MODEL HAVE ALL BEEN DEEMED SIGNIFICANT AT THE 0.1000 SIGNIFICANCE LEVEL

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	2	593249.48177041	296624.74088521	11.33897	0.0006	0.49647459	90.04786 %
ERROR	23	601674.67207574	26159.76835112				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	1194924.15384615					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
LGCTYPOP	1	331090.33378524	12.65647	0.0020	351274.74850253	13.42805	0.0016
CGICV	1	262159.14798517	10.02146	0.0045	262159.14798517	10.02146	0.0045

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=C	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	-79.69834450				
LGCTYPOP	0.05801725	3.66443	0.0016	0.01583254	0.54251360
CGICV	0.00337530	3.16567	0.0045	0.00106622	0.46867271

TABLE VI - 7

Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.54524028	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE MILBRATH BURDEN PCTPUB PERSINC CGICV CGPOP CGINC

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 9 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MAXIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	9	651520.77794377	72391.19754931	2.13149	0.0894	0.54524028	102.60243 %
ERROR	16	543403.37590238	33962.71099390				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	1194924.15384615					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
LGCTYPOP	1	331090.33378524	9.74864	0.0066	210733.27061309	6.20484	0.0229
CGICV	1	262159.14798517	7.71903	0.0129	216479.74180953	6.37404	0.0214
CGPOP	1	32599.45805206	0.95986	0.6565	8189.26950819	0.24113	0.6348
NONWHITE	1	7713.32573139	0.22711	0.6444	9241.98456810	0.27212	0.6144
BURDEN	1	9701.31913171	0.28565	0.6059	16974.72012224	0.49980	0.5039
PERSINC	1	3591.97857066	0.10576	0.7473	595.99051326	0.01755	0.8915
CGINC	1	3803.66326692	0.11200	0.7408	4373.74910824	0.12878	0.7241
MILBRATH	1	711.36773164	0.02095	0.8815	791.99092556	0.02332	0.8750
PCTPUB	1	150.18368898	0.00442	0.9463	150.18368898	0.00442	0.9463

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR H0: B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	358.88178010				
LGCTYPOP	0.06215150	2.49095	0.0229	0.02495090	0.58117254
CGICV	0.00427295	2.52469	0.0214	0.00169247	0.59331461
CGPOP	-0.31338487	-0.49105	0.6348	0.63819973	-0.16832089
NONWHITE	-2.46626387	-0.52165	0.6144	4.72778911	-0.14235850
BURDEN	-48.65047539	-0.70697	0.5039	68.81560809	-0.16726506
PERSINC	-0.02099873	-0.13247	0.8915	0.15851650	-0.05970099
CGINC	-0.19521962	-0.35886	0.7241	0.54399850	-0.10571351
MILBRATH	-0.07699954	-0.15271	0.8750	0.50423059	-0.06376500
PCTPUB	0.54496564	0.06650	0.9463	8.19368401	0.01904865

significance (P = .089) of the 54.5 percent of the variance in the dependent variable explained by the nine variables in the model.

The success of the model in explaining changes in the distribution of state aid is relative more than absolute, since over 45 percent of the variance is not accounted for, and since the expectation was that the direct measure of apportionment would be more effective an explanatory variable than the indirect measure. Still, the fact that an apportionment measure by itself explained over one-fifth of the variance in a variable as conceptually complex as metropolitan relative advantage is not to be dismissed lightly. It suggests that further work needs to be done on ways in which apportionment systems can be measured in both cross-sectional and longitudinal types of policy analysis.

Certainly the single most important finding of the analysis is that the educational needs of the large metropolitan cities are the major determinant of changes in metropolitan relative advantage. Why the 1960 measure should be so much more useful than the population change measures, and why the size of the large-city metropolitan population was more useful than the percent of the metropolitan population in large cities, can only be speculated upon. It would seem that the size of the population in large cities creates a fixed educational need that has to be met either by the local community or by the state because of their greater resource base. Reapportionment provided the legislative power necessary to redistribute funds to the cities. This analysis shows that metropolitan school districts gained in direct

proport

of the

of the

amount

cient

occur

so mu

pupil

perio

and p

powe

prob

shou

for

to

aid

the

amo

be

pe

th

pe

proportion to the size of the large-city population, not its percent of the metropolitan population. This means that the educational needs of the cities, rather than their legislative power, determined the amount of change. Power by itself, then, was a necessary but insufficient condition for changes in metropolitan relative advantage to occur. The fact that changes in metropolitan relative advantage was so much more effectively explained than changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid suggests that the response of state legislatures during this period was more to redistribute existing resources than to "level up" and provide new, across-the-board increases in aid.

1969 Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid: If the limited explanatory power of the change model is due to the conceptual and measurement problems noted earlier, the post-reapportionment, cross-sectional model should represent an improvement. As will be seen, this is the case for one of the variables, but not for the other. The model is able to explain over two-thirds of the variance in metropolitan per-pupil aid, but only 45 percent of metropolitan relative advantage.

Table VI-8 presents the simple correlation coefficients for the variables in the model. As can be seen, the only correlations among the independent variables above .4 are the negative relationship between the percent of non-whites in large cities and 1967 party competition (-.470) and the governor vote nearest 1968 (-.628); between the percent of educational revenues contributed by the state and the percent of students in public schools (.455); and between Power 3 and

TABLE VI-8

TABLE VI-8

Correlation Matrix for Variables in Post-Reapportionment
State Aid Regression Model

	PWR 3	BURDEN	LGCTYPOP	PCTLGCTY	NONWHITE	PCTPUB	PTYCOMP	GOV	STPCT	MPPA	MRA
PWR 3											
BURDEN	.469										
LGCTYPOP	.358	.040									
PCTLGCTY	.733	.359									
NONWHITE	-.220	-.379	-.007	.248							
PCTPUB	-.391	.169	-.389	-.254	.086						
PTYCOMP	.411	.084	.379	.209	-.470	-.280					
GOV	.141	.078	-.204	-.196	-.627	-.099	.262				
STPCT	-.048	.006	-.061	.214	.329	.454	-.305	-.355			
MPPA	.489	.454	.436	.361	-.265	.101	.295	-.152	.339		
MRA	.160	.313	.376	.096	-.312	.230	.321	.074	.127	.543	

tax bur

itan ci

are ex

explai

pupil

23.9

for o

chang

67.2

varia

ing

thes

metr

degr

"po

The

ita

co

le

si

po

tax burden (.469), percent of the population living in large metropolitan cities (.733), and 1967 party competition (.411).

When the R^2 for each of the independent variables in the model are examined, in Table VI-9, it is seen that five different variables explain more than ten percent of the variance in metropolitan per-pupil aid for 1969. The best single measure is Power 3, which explains 23.9 percent, and tax burden, which explains slightly less. Aid levels for one year are clearly more amenable to statistical explanation than changes in aid over time.

When all the variables are included in the model, it explains 67.2 percent of the variance in metropolitan per-pupil aid. When the variables not significant at the .10 level are removed, the five remaining variables explain 62.4 percent. As shown in Table VI-8, two of these five, governor vote nearest 1968 and percent non-white in large metropolitan cities, are correlated at -.628, indicating a significant degree of common variance between them.

Three of the variables in the model (PWR 3, GOV, and STPCT) are "political" and two (LGCTYPOP and NONWHITE) are social-demographic. The positive association of PWR 3, STPCT, and LGCTYPOP with metropolitan per-pupil aid indicates that the educational needs of large cities, combined with a high stake in educational financing, and a metropolitan legislative delegation that is both powerful and demographically cohesive, are all essential for a high level of state assistance to metropolitan school districts.

TABLE VI - 9

Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.01029933	PCTPUB
1	0.02313049	GOV
1	0.07065831	NONWHITE
1	0.08705677	PTYCOMP
1	0.11535609	STPCT
1	0.13100525	PCTLGCTY
1	0.19050773	LGCTYPOP
1	0.20624700	BURDEN
1	0.23918559	PWR3

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 1 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MINIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	1	77960.16023931	77960.16023931	7.54514	0.0109	0.23918559	34.08836 %
ERROR	24	247979.87822223	10332.49492593				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	325940.03846154					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
PWR3	1	77960.16023931	7.54514	0.0109	77960.16023931	7.54514	0.0109

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	163.75468836				
PWR3	0.18839962	2.74684	0.0109	0.06858770	0.48906604

The strong inverse relationship between NONWHITE and GOV (-.662) reflects the high percentage of southern states in the sample, states which generally have a combination of high percentages of metropolitan non-whites and low participation levels. The moderate inverse relationship between both of these variables and metropolitan per-pupil aid shows that higher levels of participation in some non-southern states does not lead to higher levels of metropolitan per-pupil aid.

An interesting finding which points up the need to use regressions as well as correlations in this type of study is that tax burden, which has almost as high a correlation with metropolitan per-pupil aid as Power 3, is the third variable to be eliminated from the equation. This is due to its high standard error of beta, which in turn is caused by its low degree of variability (minimum value 3.5 percent, maximum 6.5 percent). Just as the variable is unable to explain a high degree of variation in metropolitan per-pupil aid because of the limited range of its own variation, however, the fact remains that its degree of covariation with the dependent variable is significant. An even higher standard error of beta is seen in the PTYCOMP variable in Table VI-11.

Given the implicit objective of the study, which was to demonstrate the relationship between apportionment systems and public policy, it is easy to overstate the importance of the relationship between PWR 3 and metropolitan per-pupil aid. Even though revision of the basic measure increased its explanatory power, as hypothesized, and even though the measure is a better predictor of state aid levels than the other apportionment variables tested, acceptance of the validity of the measure and its impact on state aid involves several significant

TABLE VI - 10

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.67197804	PWR3 BURDEN PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT
8	0.67007657	PWR3 BURDEN LGCTYPUP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT
7	0.66899481	PWR3 BURDEN LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB GOV STPCT
6	0.66710235	PWR3 LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB GOV STPCT
5	0.62442834	PWR3 LGCTYPOP NONWHITE GOV STPCT

THE VARIABLES IN THE ABOVE MODEL HAVE ALL BEEN DEEMED SIGNIFICANT AT THE 0.1000 SIGNIFICANCE LEVEL

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	5	203526.19554727	40705.23910945	6.65043	0.0011	0.62442834	26.23638 %
ERROR	20	122413.84291427	6120.69214571				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	325940.03846154					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
PWR3	1	77960.16023931	12.73715	0.0022	30635.53248508	5.00524	0.0349
STPCT	1	43113.57081891	7.04390	0.0146	51063.30011658	8.34273	0.0089
NONWHITE	1	28806.42967867	4.70640	0.0401	53624.98635332	8.76126	0.0077
GOV	1	35272.97192868	5.76291	0.0248	18462.23512864	3.01636	0.0945
LGCTYPOP	1	18373.06288169	3.00179	0.0953	18373.06288169	3.00179	0.0953

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	210.08061898				
PWR3	0.13141354	2.23724	0.0349	0.05873915	0.34113605
STPCT	0.39383427	2.88838	0.0089	0.13635131	0.43290155
NONWHITE	-4.86476617	-2.95994	0.0077	1.64353380	-0.53765929
GOV	-0.00259916	-1.73677	0.0945	0.00149655	-0.32887674
LGCTYPOP	0.01505150	1.73257	0.0953	0.00868739	0.26948491

TABLE VI - 11

Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
9	0.67197804	PWR3 BURDEN PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 9 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MAXIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	9	219024.54928723	24336.06103191	3.64191	0.0119	0.67197804	27.41346 %
ERROR	16	106915.48917431	6682.21807339				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	325940.03846154					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
PWR3	1	77960.16023931	11.66681	0.0038	14407.81873967	2.15614	0.1585
STPCT	1	43113.57081891	6.45199	0.0208	20386.84688221	3.05091	0.0967
NONWHITE	1	28806.42967867	4.31091	0.0519	11117.42854702	1.66373	0.2135
GOV	1	35272.97192868	5.27863	0.0336	12339.76231836	1.84666	0.1906
LGCTYPOP	1	18373.06288169	2.74955	0.1136	23514.78912133	3.51901	0.0761
PCTPUB	1	13909.16848840	2.08152	0.1656	6656.98345113	0.99622	0.6657
BURDEN	1	616.83043042	0.09231	0.7623	1410.87320010	0.21114	0.6559
PTYCOMP	1	352.58828196	0.05277	0.8157	678.03665306	0.10147	0.7520
PCTLGCTY	1	619.76653919	0.09275	0.7618	619.76653919	0.09275	0.7618

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	-188.61321002				
PWR3	0.16069584	1.46838	0.1585	0.10943742	0.41714987
STPCT	0.31607375	1.74669	0.0967	0.18095631	0.34742740
NONWHITE	-3.49425258	-1.28986	0.2135	2.70902144	-0.38618863
GOV	-0.00224860	-1.35892	0.1906	0.00165470	-0.28451971
LGCTYPOP	0.01879577	1.87590	0.0761	0.01001959	0.33652305
PCTPUB	3.27158416	0.99811	0.6657	3.27777909	0.21899505
BURDEN	16.65259078	0.45950	0.6559	36.24083039	0.10962290
PTYCOMP	26.49600953	0.31854	0.7520	33.17909826	0.06737534
PCTLGCTY	-0.53770759	-0.30455	0.7618	1.74918258	-0.09596751

"leaps of faith" that should be noted. First, the simple correlation coefficient is only .489 and the R^2 only 23.9 percent, considerably less than they could be. Second, although the measure is derived from a set of demographic characteristics which are both necessary and theoretically defensible, these characteristics are still only indirect, inferential measures of legislative structure. Third, the relationship between Metropolitan Power 3 and metropolitan per-pupil aid takes no account of the incremental pattern of budgetary change that has been persuasively argued by Sharkansky, Wildavsky, and others. Finally, the real test of the utility of the Metropolitan Power measure lies in its relationship to Metropolitan Relative Advantage, not Metropolitan per-Pupil Aid, since the theoretical relationship being examined is the distribution of state resources more than the level of resources. For these reasons, then, the explanatory power of Power 3 over metropolitan per-pupil aid must be considered an interesting, but secondary, finding of the study.

1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage: A better test of the power measure, as noted, is its relationship to Metropolitan Relative Advantage, and as shown in Table VI-12, the relationship is not strong. Power 3 explains only 2.5 percent of the variance in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, ranking it sixth in importance out of ten variables.

In Table VI-13, it is seen that when all ten variables are included in the model, it accounts for 46.1 percent of the variance in the dependent variable. When all of the variables with a significance level above .10 are eliminated from the model in a stepwise fashion, the three remaining variables explain 42.1 percent. Power 3 is the

TABLE VI - 12

Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.00275108	PCTMET

TABLE VI - 12

Coefficients of Multiple Determination for Independent Variables
in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
1	0.00275108	PCTMET
1	0.00552185	GOV
1	0.00933583	PCTLGCTY
1	0.01626739	STPCT
1	0.02569022	PWR3
1	0.05305379	PCTPUB
1	0.09755849	NONWHITE
1	0.09837764	BURDEN
1	0.10312263	PTYCOMP
1	0.13528591	LGCTYPOP

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 1 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MINIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	1	873.55669859	873.55669859	3.75484	0.0615	0.13528591	16.71189 %
ERROR	24	5583.55868603	232.64827858				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	6457.11538462					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
LGCTYPOP	1	873.55669859	3.75484	0.0615	873.55669859	3.75484	0.0615

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	87.77831095				
LGCTYPOP	0.00289149	1.93774	0.0615	0.00149220	0.36781232

TABLE VI - 13

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable
Metropolitan Relative Advantage

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
10	0.46061698	PWR3 BURDEN PCTMET PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT
		[illegible] PCTMET PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT

TABLE VI - 13

Backward Elimination Procedure for Dependent Variable
Metropolitan Relative Advantage

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
10	0.46061698	PWR3 BURDEN PCTMET PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT
9	0.46060175	BURDEN PCTMET PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT
8	0.46012563	BURDEN PCTMET LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT
7	0.45719496	BURDEN PCTMET LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV
6	0.45454453	BURDEN PCTMET LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP
5	0.44142641	BURDEN LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP
4	0.43133893	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP
3	0.42076650	LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB

THE VARIABLES IN THE ABOVE MODEL HAVE ALL BEEN DEEMED SIGNIFICANT AT THE 0.1000 SIGNIFICANCE LEVEL

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	3	2716.93784190	905.64594730	5.32708	0.0067	0.42076650	14.28599
ERROR	22	3740.17754271	170.00807012				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	6457.11538462					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
LGCTYPOP	1	873.55669859	5.13832	0.0318	1655.87807662	9.74000	0.0051
PCTPUB	1	1062.03163700	6.24695	0.0194	1224.66558315	7.20357	0.0130
NONWHITE	1	781.34950631	4.59596	0.0411	781.34950631	4.59596	0.0411

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > |T|	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	2.93348516				
LGCTYPOP	0.00432383	3.12090	0.0051	0.00138544	0.55001304
PCTPUB	0.99831579	2.68395	0.0130	0.37195804	0.47478143
NONWHITE	-0.44486028	-2.14382	0.0411	0.20750842	-0.34931594

first variable to

the other variable

of variance of any

PCTLGCTY, another

to Power 3 ($\underline{r}$ = .7

not related to Pow

The remaining thre

PCTPUB, explain on

Although t

they do show that

metropolitan city

schools, are more

Power 3, the perce

cities, party comp

variable left in t

metropolitan citie

related to metropo

population thus se

relative advantage

need to be tested

since in the prese

number of southern

percentage of urba

As shown i

as a whole (P = .3

are not high enoug

first variable to be eliminated, which means that in combination with the other variables in the model, it accounted for the least amount of variance of any of them. The second variable to be eliminated is PCTLGCTY, another proportional power measure which is highly related to Power 3 ($\underline{r}$ = .733). The third variable to be eliminated, STPCT, is not related to Power 3, nor are the fourth, GOV, or the fifth, PCTMET. The remaining three variables in the model, LGCTYPOT, NONWHITE and PCTPUB, explain only four percent less variance than all ten variables.

Although the patterns in the data are by no means conclusive, they do show that the so-called "need" variables, the size of the large metropolitan city population, and the percent of students in public schools, are more important than the "political" variables such as Power 3, the percentage of the population living in large metropolitan cities, party competition, and electoral participation. The third variable left in the equation, percent of non-whites living in large metropolitan cities, is also a "need" variable, but it is negatively related to metropolitan relative advantage. A large metropolitan black population thus serves to decrease, rather than increase, metropolitan relative advantage, an unexpected finding. This relationship would need to be tested on a larger sample of states in order to be confirmed, since in the present study it may largely be due to the disproportionate number of southern states, most of which have a combination of high percentage of urban non-whites and low metropolitan relative advantage.

As shown in Table VI-14, the significance levels for the model as a whole (P = .321), and for all the variables in it except LGCTYPOP are not high enough to warrant extended interpretation.

TABLE VI - 14

Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for
Independent Variables in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
10	0.46061698	PWR3 BURDEN PCTMET PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT

10 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MAXIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

TABLE VI - 14

Cumulative Explanatory Power and Regression Statistics for Independent Variables in Metropolitan Relative Advantage Regression Model

NUMBER IN MODEL	R-SQUARE	VARIABLES IN MODEL
10	0.46061698	PWR3 BURDEN PCTMET PCTLGCTY LGCTYPOP NONWHITE PCTPUB PTYCOMP GOV STPCT

THE ABOVE MODEL IS THE 'BEST' 10 VARIABLE MODEL FOUND BY THE MAXIMUM R-SQUARE IMPROVEMENT PROCEDURE

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE TABLE , REGRESSION COEFFICIENTS , AND STATISTICS OF FIT FOR THE ABOVE MODEL

SOURCE	DF	SUM OF SQUARES	MEAN SQUARE	F VALUE	PROB > F	R-SQUARE	C.V.
REGRESSION	10	2974.25700741	297.42570074	1.28096	0.3216	0.46061698	16.69544 %
ERROR	15	3482.85837721	232.19055848				
CORRECTED TOTAL	25	6457.11538462					

SOURCE	DF	SEQUENTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F	PARTIAL SS	F VALUE	PROB > F
LGCTYPOP	1	873.55669859	3.76224	0.0687	992.52192448	4.27460	0.0539
PCTPUB	1	1062.03163700	4.57397	0.0471	338.05636123	1.45594	0.2451
NONWHITE	1	781.34950631	3.36512	0.0835	27.16863441	0.11701	0.7359
PCTLGCTY	1	96.92056727	0.41742	0.5342	2.23542468	0.00963	0.9201
PCTMET	1	39.51026672	0.17016	0.6878	51.90516593	0.22355	0.6473
PTYCOMP	1	45.61979569	0.19648	0.6671	97.00975346	0.41780	0.5340
BURDEN	1	37.26714866	0.16050	0.6959	63.07175558	0.27164	0.6151
GOV	1	15.93957292	0.06865	0.7922	23.72494430	0.10218	0.7514
STPCT	1	21.96343852	0.09459	0.7599	20.90131664	0.09002	0.7652
PWR3	1	0.09837573	0.00042	0.9816	0.09837573	0.00042	0.9816

SOURCE	B VALUES	T FOR HO:B=0	PROB > ITI	STD ERR B	STD B VALUES
MEAN	-5.88401519				
LGCTYPOP	0.00422128	2.06751	0.0539	0.00204172	0.53696781
PCTPUB	0.76185741	1.20662	0.2451	0.63139541	0.36232599
NONWHITE	-0.19068442	-0.34207	0.7359	0.55744699	-0.14973040
PCTLGCTY	-0.03589215	-0.09812	0.9201	0.36579838	-0.04593931
PCTMET	-0.10096149	-0.47281	0.6473	0.21353681	-0.14303771
PTYCOMP	10.10841514	0.64638	0.5340	15.63859193	0.18262202
BURDEN	3.59318607	0.52119	0.6151	6.89421028	0.16805396
GOV	0.00009923	0.31965	0.7514	0.02031043	0.08920487
STPCT	0.01046934	0.30003	0.7652	0.03489431	0.08176065
PWR3	0.00047848	0.02058	0.9816	0.02324547	0.00882464

In sum, wh

this chapter expla

pendent variables,

what the factors a

the findings and

future research,

In sum, while all but one of the regression models examined in this chapter explain over half of the variance in their respective dependent variables, none of them can be said to have conclusively shown what the factors are that determine state aid patterns. A summary of the findings and limitations of the study, as well as suggestions for future research, will be presented in Chapter VII.

Having no

terpreted individ

original hypothes

ing the study has

The firs

itan legislative

distribution of

confirmed, showi

states in the sa

Despite sub-patt

tenuous and invo

to be drawn is

relationship to

the distributio

The sec

of metropolitan

related to chan

confirmed. The

nificant increa

states as Flori

appear to have

CHAPTER VII

CONCLUDING REMARKS

Having now presented the results of the data analysis and interpreted individual findings, it is appropriate to return to the original hypotheses and determine the extent to which the theory guiding the study has been confirmed or disconfirmed.

The first hypothesis posited a relationship between metropolitan legislative power and metropolitan relative advantage in the distribution of state aid. In general, the hypothesis is clearly disconfirmed, showing a negligible relationship across the twenty-six states in the sample for both 1962 (r = -.045) and 1967 (r = -.016). Despite sub-patterns that give support to the hypothesis, they are so tenuous and involve so few states that the only reasonable conclusion to be drawn is that metropolitan legislative power has no systematic relationship to the advantage metropolitan school districts enjoy in the distribution of state aid.

The second hypothesis, that change in the relative advantage of metropolitan school districts between 1962 and 1969 were directly related to changes in metropolitan power, was also essentially disconfirmed. The overall relationship (r = .199), however, masks significant increases in the relative advantage of such malapportioned states as Florida, California, Alabama, and Maryland, all of which appear to have responded to increased metropolitan legislative power.

The third

itan delegations

able to take adva

socio-economic cl

central cities an

relationship betw

tive advantage be

basic power measu

The four

metropolitan exp

teristics of the

several types of

with metropolita

negligible (r =

or the percentag

taxes, is correl

ship is signific

the pattern, pr

burden would su

are valid, they

fort, in terms

spending it mor

A secon

to determine th

proportion of t

large-city metr

The third hypothesis was based on the assumption that metropolitan delegations with relatively homogeneous constituencies would be able to take advantage of increased power more than delegations with socio-economic cleavages in their constituencies, particularly between central cities and suburbs. Again the hypothesis is disconfirmed, the relationship between the refined power measure and metropolitan relative advantage being only slightly higher ($r = .166$) than when the basic power measure is used.

The fourth hypothesis tests the alternative explanation that metropolitan expenditures are a function of the socio-economic characteristics of the states' populations. This hypothesis was tested with several types of data. When per-capita personal income was correlated with metropolitan per-pupil aid, the relationship was found to be negligible ($r = .082$). When the educational tax burden of the state, or the percentage of personal income paid in state and local education taxes, is correlated with metropolitan relative advantage, the relationship is significantly higher ($r = .373$), with significant exceptions to the pattern, primarily among states that spend more than their tax burden would suggest. To the extent that these preliminary findings are valid, they show that states making a greater educational tax effort, in terms of the proportion of income devoted to education, are spending it more on metropolitan than on non-metropolitan school systems.

A second set of socio-economic characteristics was also examined to determine the extent to which "need factors" such as the size and proportion of the metropolitan population, size and proportion of the large-city metropolitan population, the non-white large-city metropolitan

population, and th

fluenced the distr

While the

found not to have

advantage (r = -.

showed a marked r

in 1968 (r = .436

between 1962 and

The relat

politan cities ar

definitions that

whites because th

with non-white p

was found to hav

advantage.

Another

during the perio

in metropolitan

something other

The las

politan relativ

schools. The r

cannot be said

on metropolitan

tive advantage.

population, and the percent of students attending public schools, influenced the distribution of state aid.

While the percent of population in metropolitan counties was found not to have any systematic relationship to metropolitan relative advantage (r = -.052), the size of large-city metropolitan populations showed a marked relationship to both metropolitan relative advantage in 1968 (r = .436), and to changes in metropolitan relative advantage between 1962 and 1969 (r = .526).

The relationship between the percent non-white in large metropolitan cities and metropolitan relative advantage is obscured by the definitions that are used. Several states are shown to have no non-whites because they have no cities over 100,000. Among those states with non-white populations in large metropolitan cities, the variable was found to have no significant relationship to metropolitan relative advantage.

Another socio-economic characteristic, change in population during the period studied, was found to be negligibly related to changes in metropolitan relative advantage, suggesting that "need" factors are something other than simple increases in population.

The last socio-economic factor examined in relation to metropolitan relative advantage was the percent of students in public schools. The relationship, although moderately strong (r = .230), cannot be said to provide clear support for the hypothesis that demand on metropolitan public school facilities increases metropolitan relative advantage.

In sum, t

to be significant

size of the large

overall metropoli

advantage, this s

are a key determi

the state aid for

metropolitan rela

school systems th

non-whites in lar

relative advanta

this would be an

can only conclud

all cities under

tion in non-whit

or that the spec

icant factor in

In Hypot

and state aid wa

Index, and a sho

islature in 1967

moderate positiv

ropolitan per-pu

(r = .321).

In Hypo

participation a

In sum, the only socio-economic characteristic that was found to be significantly related to metropolitan relative advantage was the size of the large-city metropolitan population. Since the size of the overall metropolitan population is not related to metropolitan relative advantage, this suggests that the needs of central city school districts are a key determinant of the favoritism shown to metropolitan areas in the state aid formula, and by extension, that where there is high metropolitan relative advantage, it is directed more toward large-city school systems than suburban school systems. The fact that the percent non-whites in large metropolitan cities was not related to metropolitan relative advantage is somewhat puzzling, since one would assume that this would be an even clearer need factor than population alone. One can only conclude that either the measure was too crude (eliminating all cities under 100,000 from the analysis, and showing little variation in non-white populations among those with cities over 100,000), or that the special needs of central city minorities are not a significant factor in the aid formula.

In Hypothesis Five the relationship between party competition and state aid was tested using both a long-term measure, the Ranney Index, and a short-term measure, the level of competition for the legislature in 1967. The results were inconclusive, although there was a moderate positive relationship between 1967 party competition and metropolitan per-pupil aid ($\underline{r}$ = .295) and metropolitan relative advantage ($\underline{r}$ = .321).

In Hypothesis Six the relationship between levels of electoral participation and state aid expenditures were examined. Using both

the long-term Milb

measure, no clear

The third

total educational

a moderately stro

($\underline{r}$ = .339), as mi

tive advantage wa

The concl

have relatively

sured with the l

Hypothes

variables (party

economic" variab

population, perc

cent students i

variables would

a clearly stron

and state aid.

Hypothe

power apportio

aid. The resu

support to the

change model,

.046 of the va

tage, while cl

variance.

the long-term Milbrath Index and a short-term 1968 gubernatorial vote measure, no clear patterns emerged.

The third political variable to be examined, the percent of total educational revenues contributed by the state, was found to have a moderately strong relationship with metropolitan per-pupil aid (r = .339), as might be expected, but its impact on metropolitan relative advantage was much lower (r = .128).

The conclusion must be that, on balance, political variables have relatively limited impact on state aid patterns, at least as measured with the limited indexes used here.

Hypothesis Seven tested the relative impact of the "political" variables (party competition and participation) and the "socio-economic" variables (metropolitan population, large-city metropolitan population, percent non-whites in large metropolitan cities, and percent students in public schools). The hypothesis, that political variables would be more strongly related, was not supported, showing a clearly stronger relationship between socio-economic "need" variables and state aid.

Hypothesis Eight tests the relative impact of the metropolitan power apportionment measures and the other political variables on state aid. The results of the analysis lend only tentative and inconclusive support to the hypothesis. The two political variables used in the change model, the Ranney Index and the Milbrath Index, explain .000 and .046 of the variance in percent change in metropolitan relative advantage, while change in metropolitan power accounts for .055 of the variance.

When the po

portion of the var

as follows: Ranne

Milbrath Index (.0

(.016). In contra

four of the other

however, since on

cent of the varia

tial. The hypoth

Hypothesi

power measure and

state aid. When

efficient of Var

three is able to

in either metrop

in 1962.

In the

sure is the sin

variation in me

The Inverted Co

account for .09

ment measures

none of the th

and Power 3 ra

Variation, acc

When the post-reapportionment patterns are examined, the proportion of the variance accounted for by the political variables is as follows: Ranney Index (.058), 1967 Party Competition (.103), Milbrath Index (.036), 1968 Governor Vote (.006), and State Percent (.016). In contrast, the Power 3 measure accounts for .010, less than four of the other five variables. This ranking is largely irrelevant, however, since only 1967 party competition explains more than 10 percent of the variance, and this figure is so low as to be inconsequential. The hypothesis is essentially disconfirmed.

Hypothesis Nine examines the relative explanatory power of the power measure and the other apportionment variables in accounting for state aid. When metropolitan power is compared with the Inverted Coefficient of Variation and the Dauer-Kelsay measures, none of the three is able to account for more than a fraction of the total variance in either metropolitan per-pupil aid or metropolitan relative advantage in 1962.

In the 1967-69 post-reapportionment analysis, the Power 3 measure is the single most useful explanatory variable in accounting for variation in metropolitan per-pupil aid, explaining .230 of the total. The Inverted Coefficient of Variation and the Dauer-Kelsay measures account for .093 and .110, respectively. When these three apportionment measures are related to metropolitan relative advantage, however, none of the three is found to explain a significant amount of variance, and Power 3 ranks behind Dauer-Kelsay and Inverted Coefficient of Variation, accounting for .010, .037, and .039, respectively.

When cha

aid, only one va

tion, is found t

sures accounts f

per-pupil aid, c

.000, change in

.006. When cha

however, Change

plain a healthy

in Metropolitan

one variable is

complex as char

ther analysis

In sum

other apportio

pupil aid. It

the variance i

variable that

icant portion

this case it

counts for th

change in met

dent variable

itan power me

variables, ar

When changes in apportionment are related to changes in state aid, only one variable, change in the Inverted Coefficient of Variation, is found to have any explanatory value. None of the three measures accounts for significant variation in changes in metropolitan per-pupil aid, change in Inverted Coefficient of Variation explaining .000, change in Dauer-Kelsay .027, and change in Metropolitan Power .006. When change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage is analyzed, however, Change in Inverted Coefficient of Variation is found to explain a healthy 20 percent of the total variance, followed by change in Metropolitan Power, .055, and change in Dauer-Kelsay, .046. That one variable is able to account for so much variance in a process as complex as change in state aid is most significant and deserves further analysis in the future.

In sum, the Power 3 measure is most successful relative to the other apportionment variables in accounting for 1968 Metropolitan per-pupil aid. It is unable to account for a significant proportion of the variance in the other three aid variables. The only other aid variable that the apportionment measures are able to explain a significant portion of, is change in metropolitan relative advantage, and in this case it is change in Inverted Coefficient of Variation that accounts for the variance. Since metropolitan relative advantage and change in metropolitan relative advantage are the two central dependent variables of the study, the conclusion must be that the metropolitan power measures are less effective than the other apportionment variables, and that the hypothesis is therefore disconfirmed.

Despite t

that malapportion

of the American

also unlikely to

lingering sense

policy. Common

study evidence,

face value. It

a study that ha

gate data, mult

longitudinal re

clusions.

To be

such as Califo

clearly influe

hypothesis und

hypothesized,

lation, percen

a significant

teresting and

Yet at the sa

Change in Met

portion of ch

the possible

Interpretation and Conclusions

Despite the findings of Jacob , Dye, Sharkansky, and others that malapportionment had no significant impact on the policy choices of the American states, and by extension, that reapportionment is also unlikely to produce significant changes in policy, there is the lingering sense that apportionment systems do make a difference in policy. Common sense, as well as a wide range of accumulated case study evidence, argue against accepting the Dye et al. findings at face value. It is therefore all the more disappointing to find that a study that has attempted to rebut Dye on his own terms, using aggregate data, multivariate statistics, more precise measures, and a longitudinal research design, should essentially come to the same conclusions.

To be sure, the dramatic changes in aid patterns in states such as California, New York, and Florida, where malapportionment had clearly influenced state policy making, offers some support for the hypothesis underlying this study. And the unexpected, or at least unhypothesized, findings that "need" factors such as central city population, percent non-white, and percent in public schools, account for a significant portion of the total variance in state aid, are an interesting and previously undocumented contribution to the literature. Yet at the same time, the central independent variable of the study, Change in Metropolitan Power, has failed to explain even a small proportion of changes in aid. It is important now to examine some of the possible reasons why.

Probably

the inclusion of

"metropolitan."

unavoidable beca

able with the s

central city an

was avoidable a

to see how the

the need for a

obvious that th

character and

More precise a

cation schemes

Anothe

influenced the

sample. When

in a study, a

purely specul

cluded all th

Carolina, Vir

the Midwester

Missouri, Min

New England

and Southwes

is a clear b

Probably the single most obvious shortcoming of the study is the inclusion of so many diverse types of cities under the heading "metropolitan." To some extent, as has been noted, the problem was unavoidable because of the need to make the legislative units comparable with the state aid units. The arbitrary distinction between central city and suburb, using 100,000 as the cutting point, however, was avoidable and was probably a mistake. Offhand, it is difficult to see how the problem could have been significantly reduced, given the need for a common definition across all states. Yet, it is quite obvious that there are many cities over 100,000 that are suburban in character and many under 100,000 that are central city in character. More precise analyses must await the development of better classification schemes.

Another obvious shortcoming of the study that could well have influenced the findings, but which again was unavoidable, was the sample. When only 26 of 48 potential units of analysis are included in a study, any generalizations from the findings must be considered purely speculative. The twenty-six states in the present study included all the Western states, and all but three (Mississippi, North Carolina, Virginia) of the Southern states. A large proportion of the Midwestern states (Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Iowa, Nebraska, Kansas, Missouri, Minnesota) are conspicuously absent, as are the Northern New England states (Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts), and Southwestern states (Texas, Oklahoma). Regionally, then, there is a clear bias toward the Western and Southern states.

In terms

states omitted f

Iowa, Kansas, Ok

continued to hav

three (Illinois

majorities. Si

Delaware, Minne

politan majorit

in these states

been included i

presence would

nomic, and ther

than the South

study would be

change. Wheth

politan legisl

biases inheren

systematic way

the study.

The da

the inconclus

the state aid

cise, and at

pends upon th

boundaries.

itan" and "no

In terms of the influence of reapportionment on the seventeen states omitted from the state aid sample, eight of them (North Dakota, Iowa, Kansas, Oklahoma, North Carolina, Virginia, New Hampshire, Maine) continued to have a metropolitan minority after reapportionment, and three (Illinois, Ohio, Massachusetts) continued to have metropolitan majorities. Six of them, however (Texas, Colorado, Missouri, Indiana, Delaware, Minnesota), changed from a metropolitan minority to a metropolitan majority, and while there is no assurance that the aid changes in these states would have significantly altered the findings had they been included in the analysis, it is also quite possible that their presence would have made a marked difference. Given the greater economic, and therefore educational, resources of the Midwestern states than the South, for example, a substitution of these regions in the study would be likely to produce a significant increase in mean aid change. Whether these changes would be related to increases in metropolitan legislative power can only be speculated upon. In sum, the biases inherent in the sample, while they cannot be determined in any systematic way, are likely to have had an impact on the outcome of the study.

The data themselves provide a third possible explanation for the inconclusive findings. Both the metropolitan power measure and the state aid measures are derived from data that are at best imprecise, and at worst erroneous. The validity of the power measure depends upon the congruence of legislative and SMSA county district boundaries. While in most cases it was easy to identify "metropolitan" and "non-metropolitan" legislators, there were enough cases

where a subjecti

lost. Similarly

sistency in form

the aid monies i

of education, as

(such as supplen

frequently neces

seen financial

and to therefor

the data were u

be known.

A four

an overly simp

model assumes

in metropolita

the amount and

may be false a

The m

changes in st

crease in exp

budgets and c

takes no acco

state aid.

increase in

such factors

ysis should

where a subjective judgment was necessary that accuracy was inevitably lost. Similarly, the state aid data were carefully screened for consistency in formats and then double-checked to assure accuracy. Still, the aid monies included in the annual report of the state departments of education, as well as those listed elsewhere, or not listed at all (such as supplemental appropriations to school districts, which are frequently necessary to assist central city districts during unforeseen financial emergencies), are likely to vary from state to state, and to therefore produce errors in analysis. These shortcomings in the data were unavoidable, and their influence on the findings cannot be known.

A fourth, more general explanation for the lack of findings is an overly simplistic conceptualization of the budgetary process. The model assumes that the state aid formula will be responsive to changes in metropolitan legislative power, and that the legislature determines the amount and distribution of state aid. For several reasons, these may be false assumptions.

The most persuasive theoretical explanation yet developed for changes in state aid is incrementalism, or the steady, inexorable increase in expenditures from year to year that result from limited budgets and constraints on the decisional process.[1] The present model takes no account of incrementalism as a factor shaping changes in state aid. To some extent, the problem is minimized by using percent increase in state aid as the dependent variable, thereby controlling such factors as size and wealth. Still, a careful longitudinal analysis should be able to also determine the amount of change attributable

to incrementalis

remaining varian

advantage, most

that it could ea

Another

nomenon, in whi

periods of litt

ular pattern, a

points along th

ing this period

patterns than

in a "lag" per

legislators to

power they had

imal. On the

and surplus re

tion and expan

without chang

to a certain

of expenditur

to be theoret

With

development

be considere

tendency to

data on coll

to incrementalism and then provide alternative explanations for the remaining variance. Particularly with change in metropolitan relative advantage, most of the states in the sample exhibited so little change that it could easily be attributed to incrementalism alone.

Another aspect of the budgetary cycle is the "surge-lag" phenomenon, in which periods of rapid increase in budgets are followed by periods of little or no increase.[2] These appear to follow no particular pattern, and to have no consistent or common cause. The varying points along the "surge-lag" continuum where states were located during this period may have had more of an influence on their state aid patterns than changes in demographic representation. If a state was in a "lag" period, for example, the opportunities for metropolitan legislators to significantly alter the state aid formula, however much power they had gained as a result of reapportionment, would be minimal. On the other hand, if a new tax increase had just been passed and surplus revenues were providing opportunities for program innovation and expansion, metropolitan schools might be advantaged even without changes in legislative power. In short, the budgetary cycle, to a certain extent, has a life of its own, and longitudinal analyses of expenditure patterns must account for this if their findings are to be theoretically persuasive.

With regard to the role that the legislature plays in the development of the state aid formula, the model begins with what could be considered a variation of Robinson's "ecological fallacy," or the tendency to infer individual attributes or behavior from aggregate data on collectivities.[3] It assumes that the impact of apportionment

systems can be me

legislature, tha

and non-metropol

rectly into metr

state aid. Nowh

the attitudes ar

The ass

the state aid f

there are theor

tion has more c

types of polic

more specifica

and William A.

a number of ot

"educational e

partments of

and of teache

ad hoc group

groups limit

velop state

tween the le

present anal

The

network of

educational

these compe

systems can be measured by examining the demographic composition of the legislature, that the major cleavage it creates is between metropolitan and non-metropolitan areas, and that metropolitan power translates directly into metropolitan relative advantage in the distribution of state aid. Nowhere are these assumptions tested to determine whether the attitudes and behavior of legislators conform to these assumptions.

The assumption that the legislature is the major arena in which the state aid formula is shaped and changed is intuitively sound, and there are theoretical reasons for believing that state aid to education has more of a constituency base in the legislature than other types of policies. The literature on the politics of education, and more specifically a recent study by Frank A. Pinner, John N. Collins, and William A. Sederberg on educational reform in Michigan, show that a number of other forces are operative as well.[4] The role of the "educational establishment"--educational administrators in state departments of education, organized associations of school administrators and of teachers, PTA's, "friends" of public education, and various ad hoc groups that mobilize around specific issues--all of these groups limit the alternatives available to legislators as they develop state aid policy. They also cut into and blur the linkage between the legislator and his constituency that is the basis of the present analysis.

The Pinner, Collins, and Sederberg study points up the complex network of forces that are brought to bear on legislators as they make educational policy, as well as the mammoth obstacles to change that these competing forces produce. It may well be that the nature of

these interaction

within any given

and distribution

theme of the res

nation: "The sy

will have to ch

Perhaps

lationship betw

in metropolitan

cational policy

latures, in wh

ment." Certai

cation has bec

has little ide

on the school

stand this to

trators have

are appropria

legislature a

formula.

Give

tional polic

may be too s

analysis suc

impact, but

to measure

these interactions is so situational, both across states and over time within any given state, that whatever changes do occur in the amount and distribution of state aid are largely accidental. The underlying theme of the respondents in this study was one of fatalism and resignation: "The system will change only when things get so bad that it will have to change or face total paralysis."

Perhaps the major conclusion to be drawn from the lack of relationship between change in metropolitan legislative power and change in metropolitan relative advantage is that the real influence in educational policy making in the American states lies outside the legislatures, in what could loosely be termed the "educational establishment." Certainly a plausible argument could be made that public education has become so "professionalized" that the average legislator has little idea of the impact that the policies he votes on will have on the schools in his district. To the extent that he does not understand this to begin with, and to the extent that educational administrators have discretion in the allocation of state aid funds once they are appropriated, it is unlikely that demographic cleavages in the legislature are going to have a significant impact on the state aid formula.

Given the complexity of the environment in which state educational policy is made, the influence of reapportionment on state aid may be too subtle to capture with an aggregate data, macro-level analysis such as has been used here. Reapportionment will have an impact, but the form that it takes and the research methods necessary to measure it will have to be determined in a future study.

[1]See In
Rand McNally, I
state budgetary

[2]This
the basic incr
Financing Stat
D.C.: The Bro

[3]W. S.
Individuals,"
Bobbs-Merrill

[4]Fran
"The State an
tional Financ
lished).

CHAPTER VII

Notes

[1]See Ira Sharkansky, Spending in the American States (Chicago: Rand McNally, 1968) for the best discussion of incrementalism in the state budgetary process.

[2]This process can be considered a variation or refinement of the basic incremental model. It is discussed in James A. Maxwell, Financing State and Local Governments, Revised Edition (Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1969).

[3]W. S. Robinson, "Ecological Correlations and the Behavior of Individuals," American Sociological Review, Vol. XV (1950), 351-357; Bobbs-Merrill Reprint S-243.

[4]Frank A. Pinner, John N. Collins, and William A. Sederberg, "The State and Education: Decision-Making on the Reform of Educational Finances in Michigan," A Report to the Urban Institute (Unpublished).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1:30

Anton, Thomas J
Urbana

Bailey, Stephe
Wood.
tion i
1962.

Baker, Gordon
Politi
House,

_____. Ru
quenc
Doubl

Benson, Charl
of Am
1965.

_____. Pe
Hough

Bishop, Geor
by I
Inc.

Bloomberg, W
and
Effe

Brazer, Har
Pap
Inc

Break, Geor
Sta

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Books

Anton, Thomas J. The Politics of State Expenditures in Illinois. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1966.

Bailey, Stephen K., Richard T. Frost, Paul E. Marsh, and Robert C. Wood. Schoolmen and Politics: A Study of State Aid to Education in the Northeast. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1962.

Baker, Gordon E. The Reapportionment Revolution: Representation, Political Power, and the Supreme Court. New York: Random House, 1966.

_____. Rural versus Urban Politician Power: The Nature and Consequences of Unbalanced Representation. Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1955.

Benson, Charles S. The Cheerful Prospect: A Statement on the Future of American Education. Boston: Houghton-Mifflin Company, 1965.

_____. Perspectives on the Economics of Public Education. Boston: Houghton-Mifflin Company, 1961.

Bishop, George. Tax Burdens and Benefits of Government Expenditures by Income Class, 1961 and 1965. New York: Tax Foundation, Inc., 1967.

Bloomberg, Warner, Jr. and Morris Sunshine. Suburban Power Structures and Public Education: A Study of Values, Influence, and Tax Effort. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1963.

Brazer, Harvey E. City Expenditures in the United States, Occasional Paper 66. New York: National Bureau of Economic Research, Inc., 1959.

Break, George. Intergovernmental Fiscal Relations in the United States. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1967.

Brickman, Willi
York:
1964.

Burkhead, Jesse
Syracus

_____. Publ
Syracus

_____. Sta
Syracu

Campbell, Alan
Patter

Committee for
New Yo

Conant, James
Hill,

_____. Sl

Congressional
Washi

Coons, John E
Wealt
Belkn

Cornell, Fra
Scho
Educ
1965

Crecine, Joh
1968

David, Paul
Sub
Vir

_____.
tra

Davis, Jame
Gov

Dixon, Robe
Law

Brickman, William W. Educational Systems in the United States. New York: The Center for Applied Research in Education, Inc., 1964.

Burkhead, Jesse. Input-Output in Large City High Schools. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1967.

_____. Public School Finance: Economics and Politics. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1964.

_____. State and Local Taxes for Public Education. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1963.

Campbell, Alan K. and Seymour Sacks. Metropolitan America: Fiscal Patterns and Governmental System. New York: Free Press, 1967.

Committee for Economic Development. Paying for Better Public Schools. New York: The Committee, 1959.

Conant, James Bryant. Shaping Educational Policy. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1964.

_____. Slums and Suburbs. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1961.

Congressional Quarterly Service. Representation and Apportionment. Washington, D.C.: Congressional Quarterly Service, 1966.

Coons, John E., William H. Clune, III, Stephen D. Sugarman. Private Wealth and Public Education. Cambridge, Massachusetts: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1970.

Cornell, Francis G. The Index of Local Economic Ability in State School Finance Programs. Washington, D.C.: Committee on Tax Education and School Finance, National Education Association, 1965.

Crecine, John P. Government Problem-Solving. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1968.

David, Paul T., and Ralph Eisenberg. Devaluation of the Urban and Suburban Vote, 2 Volumes. Charlottesville: University of Virginia, Bureau of Public Administration, 1961.

_____. State Legislative Redistricting. Chicago: Public Administration Service, 1962.

Davis, James W., ed. Politics, Programs and Budgets: Reader in Government Budgeting.

Dixon, Robert G., Jr. Democratic Representation: Reapportionment in Law and Politics. New York: Oxford University Press, 1968.

Fabricant, Solo
States
Researc

Fels Institute
School
of Pen

Fisher, Glenn
Financ

Francis, Wayne
parati

Freeman, Roger
Instit

Garfinkel, He
Guide
State

Garvue, Rober
MacMi

Gittell, Mari
Calif

Gove, Samuel
appor
Cente
1968.

Greene, Lee S
the
1968

Hamilton, Ho
New

_____. R
and

Hansen, W. L
Fina

Hanson, Royc
Pren

Hauser, Phi
Yor

Fabricant, Solomon. The Trend of Government Activity in the United States since 1900. New York: National Bureau of Economic Research, 1952.

Fels Institute. Special Education and Fiscal Requirements of Urban School Districts in Pennsylvania. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, 1964.

Fisher, Glenn W. Taxes and Politics: A Study of Illinois Public Finance. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1969.

Francis, Wayne L. Legislative Issues in the Fifty States: A Comparative Analysis. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1967.

Freeman, Roger A. Taxes for the Schools. Washington, D.C.: The Institute for Social Science Research, 1960.

Garfinkel, Herbert and L. J. Fein. Fair Representation: A Citizen's Guide to Legislative Apportionment. East Lansing: Michigan State University Press, 1960.

Garvue, Robert J. Modern Public School Finance. New York: MacMillan, 1969.

Gittell, Marilyn, ed. Educating an Urban Population. Beverly Hills, California: Sage Publications, Inc., 1967.

Gove, Samuel K. Reapportionment and the Cities: The Impact of Reapportionment on Urban Legislation in Illinois. Chicago: Center for Research and Urban Government, Loyola University, 1968.

Greene, Lee S., Malcolm E. Jewell and Daniel R. Grant. The States and the Metropolis. University: University of Alabama Press, 1968.

Hamilton, Howard D., ed. Legislative Apportionment: Key to Power. New York: Harper and Row, 1964.

_____. Reapportioning Legislatures: A Consideration of Criteria and Computers. Columbus, Ohio: Merrill, 1966.

Hansen, W. Lee and Burton A. Weisbrod, eds. Benefits, Costs and Finance of Public Higher Education. Chicago: Markham, 1967.

Hanson, Royce. The Political Thicket. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1966.

Hauser, Philip and Schnore, Leo, eds. The Study of Urbanization. New York: Wiley, 1965.

Havard, William
tion:
Rouge:

Havighurst, Rob
and Bac

_____, ed.
Nation

Heard, Alexand
Englew

Hickrod, G. Al
Inequa
Inters

Hinricks, Har
Benef
Palis

Iannaccone, L
for A

James, H. Tho
Scho

_____, Ja
tion
Star

_____, J
Dec
Sta

Jewell, Mal
New

_____, e
tor

_____ a
Un

Johns, Roe
Er

Key, V. O
l

Havard, William C. and Loren P. Beth. The Politics of Misrepresentation: Rural-Urban Conflict in the Florida Legislature. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1962.

Havighurst, Robert J. Education in Metropolitan Areas. Boston: Allyn and Bacon, Inc., 1966.

_____, ed. Metropolitanism: Its Challenge to Education. Chicago: National Society for the Study of Education, 1968.

Heard, Alexander, ed. State Legislatures in American Politics. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1966.

Hickrod, G. Alan and Cesar M. Sabulao. Increasing Social and Economic Inequalities among Suburban Schools. Danville, Illinois: Interstate Printers and Publishers, Inc., 1969.

Hinricks, Harley H. and Graeme M. Taylor, eds. Program Budgeting and Benefit-Cost Analysis: Cases, Text and Readings. Pacific Palisades, California: Goodyear Publishing Co.

Iannaccone, Laurence. Politics in Education. New York: The Center for Applied Research in Education, Inc., 1967.

James, H. Thomas. School Revenue Systems in Five States. Stanford: School of Education, Stanford University, 1961.

_____, James A. Kelly and Walter I. Garms. Determinants of Educational Expenditures in Large Cities of the United States. Stanford: School of Education, Stanford University, 1966.

_____, J. Alan Thomas, and Harold J. Dyck. Wealth, Expenditure and Decision-Making for Education. Stanford: School of Education, Stanford University, 1963.

Jewell, Malcolm E. The State Legislature: Politics and Practice. New York: Random House, 1969.

_____, et al. The Politics of Reapportionment. New York: Atherton, 1962.

_____ and Samuel C. Patterson. The Legislative Process in the United States. New York: Random House, 1966.

Johns, Roe L. and Edgar L. Morphet. Financing the Public Schools. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1960.

Key, V. O. Jr. American State Politics. New York: Alfred Knopf, 1956.

Kimbrough, Ralph B. P
Chicago: Rand

Lockhard, Duane. The
York: MacMill

McKay, Robert B. Rea
Representatio

McKelvey, Troy V. and
tration. Bev
Inc., 1969.

McLoone, Eugene P. E
of Education.

Martin, Roscoe C. Th
Atherton Pres

_____. Government
University Pr

Maxwell, James A., ed
ington, D.C.:

Meranto, Philip. Sch
Charles E. Me

Miner, Jerry. Social
Education.

Mitau, G. Theodore.
of Minnesota

Mosher, Frederick C.
ican Governm
Mead, 1967.

Munger, Frank J. and
Aid to Educa

National Education A
The Challeng
NEA, 1967.

_____. Interdepe
The Nation.

Kimbrough, Ralph B. Political Power and Educational Decision-Making. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1964.

Lockhard, Duane. The Politics of State and Local Government. New York: MacMillan, 1963.

McKay, Robert B. Reapportionment: The Law and Politics of Equal Representation. New York: The Twentieth Century Fund, 1965.

McKelvey, Troy V. and Austin D. Swanson, eds. Urban School Administration. Beverly Hills, California: Sage Publications, Inc., 1969.

McLoone, Eugene P. Effects of Tax Elasticity on the Financial Support of Education. Urbana: University of Illinois, 1962.

Martin, Roscoe C. The Cities and the Federal System. New York: Atherton Press, 1965.

_____. Government and the Suburban School. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1962.

Maxwell, James A., ed. Financing State and Local Governments. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1969.

Meranto, Philip. School Politics in the Metropolis. Columbus, Ohio: Charles E. Merrill, 1970.

Miner, Jerry. Social and Economic Factors in Spending for Public Education. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1963.

Mitau, G. Theodore. Politics in Minnesota. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1960.

Mosher, Frederick C. and Orville F. Poland, eds. The Costs of American Governments: Facts, Trends, Myths. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1967.

Munger, Frank J. and Richard F. Fenno. National Politics and Federal Aid to Education. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1962.

National Education Association: Committee on Educational Finance. The Challenge of Change in School Finance. Washington, D.C.: NEA, 1967.

_____. Interdependence in School Finance: The City--The State--The Nation. Washington, D.C.: NEA, 1968.

National Muni
New

_____. R
1964

_____. R

Netzer, Dick
Broo

Newcomer, Ma
Gov

Ornati, Osc
Cen

Page, Thoma
of

Peterson, I
Ste
Edu
of

Phelps, Ed
W.

Reller, Th
Ad
19

Sacks, Sey
M

Saint Lou

Schallee,
C

Schubert,
S

Schultze

Shadoan,

National Municipal League. Compendium on Legislative Apportionment. New York: NML, 1962.

_____. Reapportionment: Second Year in Review. New York: NML, 1964.

_____. Reapportionment: A Year in Review. New York: NML, 1963.

Netzer, Dick. Economics of the Property Tax. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1965.

Newcomer, Mabel. An Index of Taxpaying Ability of State and Local Governments. New York: Columbia Teachers College, 1935.

Ornati, Oscar. Poverty Amid Affluence. New York: The Twentieth Century Fund, 1966.

Page, Thomas. Legislative Apportionment in Kansas. Lawrence: Bureau of Government Research, University of Kansas, 1952.

Peterson, LeRoy J., Richard A. Rossmiller, Howard E. Wakefield, and Stewart D. North. Economic Impact of State Support Models on Educational Finance. Madison: School of Education, University of Wisconsin, 1963.

Phelps, Edmund S., ed. Private Wants and Public Needs. New York: W. W. Norton, 1962, 1965.

Reller, Theodore L. and Edgar L. Morphet, eds. Comparative Educational Administration. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1962.

Sacks, Seymour and William F. Hellmuth, Jr. Financing Government in a Metropolitan Area. New York: The Free Press, 1961.

Saint Louis Public Schools. A Tale of Two Cities. St. Louis, 1968.

Schallee, Howard G., ed. Public Expenditure Decisions in the Urban Community. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1963.

Schubert, Glendon A. Reapportionment. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1965.

Schultze, Charles L. The Politics and Economics of Public Spending. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1968.

Shadoan, Arlene T. Preparation, Review, and Execution of the State Operating Budget. Lexington: University of Kentucky, Bureau of Business Research, 1963.

Sharkansk

Sorauf,

Thomas,

Turner,

Vernon,

William

Zimmer,

Becker

Benson

Boyd,

Boynto

Sharkansky, Ira. The Politics of Taxing and Spending. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1969.

_____. The Routines of Politics. New York: Van-Nostrand-Reinhold, 1970.

Sorauf, Frank J. Party and Representation: Legislative Politics in Pennsylvania. New York: Atherton Press, 1963.

Thomas, J. Alan. School Finance and Educational Opportunity in Michigan. Lansing: Michigan Department of Education, 1968.

Turner, Julius. Party and Constituency: Pressures on Congress. Revised edition by Edward V. Schneier, Jr. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1970.

Vernon, Raymond. The Myth and Reality of Our Urban Problems. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1966.

Williams, Oliver P., Harold Herman, Charles S. Liebman, and Thomas R. Dye. Suburban Differences and Metropolitan Policy. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1965.

Zimmer, Basil G. and Amos H. Hawley. Metropolitan Area Schools: Resistance to District Reorganization. Beverly Hills, California: Sage Publications, Inc., 1968.

Articles

Becker, R. W., F. L. Foote, M. Lubega, and S. V. Monsma. "Correlates of Legislative Voting: The Michigan House of Representatives." Midwest Journal of Political Science (1962), 384-396.

Benson, Charles S. "State Aid Patterns." In Public School Finance: Economics and Politics, by Jesse Burkhead. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1964. Chapter IX, pp. 205-235.

Boyd, William J. D. Changing Patterns of Apportionment. New York: National Municipal League, September 1965.

_____. "Suburbia Takes Over." National Civic Review, Vol. LIV, No. 6 (June 1965), 294-298.

Boynton, G. R., Samuel C. Patterson, and Ronald D. Hedlund. "The Missing Links in Legislative Politics." Journal of Politics, Vol. XXXI, No. 3 (August 1969), 700-721.

Brady, Davi
Tra

Brazer, Har
Nat

_____.
pol
Bir
Syr

Bronder, Le
Pr
19

Campbell,
Me
19

_____,
Ma
Vo

Clark, Te
p
A

Clausen,
S
A
1

Coleman,
F

Crane, W
J

Dauer, M

Dawson,

David, H

Davies,

Brady, David and Douglas Edmonds. "One Man, One Vote--So What?" Transaction, Vol. IV (March 1967), 41-46.

Brazer, Harvey E. "The Federal Government and State-Local Finances." National Tax Journal, Vol. XX, No. 2 (June 1967), 155-164.

_____. "Some Fiscal Implications of Metropolitanism." In Metropolitan Issues: Social, Governmental, Fiscal, ed. Guthrie S. Birkhead. Syracuse: Maxwell Graduate School, University of Syracuse, February 1962.

Bronder, Leonard. "Detroit Metropolitan School Finances--The Revenue Problem." National Tax Journal, Vol. XIX, No. 4 (December 1966), 399-410.

Campbell, Alan K. "Taxes and Industrial Location in the New York Metropolitan Region." National Tax Journal (September 1958), 195-218.

_____, and Philip Meranto. "The Metropolitan Education Dilemma: Matching Resources to Needs." Urban Affairs Quarterly, Vol. II (September 1966), 42-63.

Clark, Terry N. "Community Structure, Decision-Making, Budget Expenditures, and Urban Renewal in 51 American Communities." American Sociological Review, Vol. XXXIII, No. 4 (August 1967).

Clausen, Aage R. and Richard B. Cheney. "A Comparative Analysis of Senate-House Voting on Economic and Welfare Policy, 1953-1964." American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIV, No. 1 (March 1970), 138-152.

Coleman, James S. "Political Money." American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIV, No. 4 (December 1970), 1074-1087.

Crane, W. W. "A Caveat on Roll Call Studies of Party Voting." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. IV (1960), 237-249.

Dauer, Manning and Robert G. Kelsay. "Unrepresentative States." National Municipal Review (December 1955), 571-575.

Dawson, Richard E. and James A. Robinson. "Inter-Party Competition, Economic Variables and Welfare Policies in the American States." Journal of Politics, Vol. XXIII, No. 2 (May 1963), 265-289.

David, Paul T. "1 Member vs. 2, 3, 4 or 5." National Civic Review, Vol. LV, No. 2 (February 1966), 75-81.

Davies, David. "Financing Urban Functions and Services." Law and Contemporary Problems, Vol. XXX (Winter 1955), 137.

Davis, Otto, M. A. H. Dempster and Aaron Wildavsky. "A Theory of the Budgetary Process." American Political Science Review, Vol. LX, No. 3 (September 1966), 529-547.

DeGrazia, Alfred. Essay on Apportionment and Representative Government. Washington, D.C.: American Enterprise Institute for Public Policy Research, 1963.

Derge, David R. "Metropolitan and Outstate Alignments in Illinois and Missouri Legislative Delegations." American Political Science Review (December 1958).

DeRubertis, William. "How Apportionment with Selected Demographic Variables Relates to Policy Orientation." Western Political Quarterly (December 1969), 904-920.

Dixon, Robert G., Jr. "Congress and Reapportionment: Issues and Opportunities." The George Washington University American Assembly Report on the Congress and America's Future. Washington, D.C.: The George Washington University, 1965.

_____. "Reapportionment Perspectives: What is Fair Representation?" American Bar Association Journal (April 1965).

Dye, Thomas R. "City-Suburban Social Distance and Public Policy." Social Forces, Vol. XLIV, No. 1 (September 1965), 100-106.

_____. "A Comparison of Constituency Influences in the Upper and Lower Chambers of a State Legislature." Western Political Quarterly, Vol. XIV (1961), 473-480.

_____. "Malapportionment and Public Policy in the States." Journal of Politics, Vol. XXVII (1965), 586-601.

Elliff, John T. "Malapportionment Remeasured." American Political Science Review, Vol. LVIII (December 1964), 643-655.

Fischer, Glenn. "Determinants of State and Local Government Expenditures: A Preliminary Analysis." National Tax Journal, Vol. XIV, No. 4 (December 1961), 349-355.

_____. "Interstate Variation in State and Local Government Expenditures." National Tax Journal, Vol. XVII (March 1964), 57-64.

_____. "Revenue and Expenditure Patterns in Five Large Cities." Quarterly Review of Economics and Business, Vol. III, No. 3 (Autumn 1963), 61-72.

Flinn, Thomas A. "Party Responsibility in the States: Some Causal Factors." American Political Science Review, Vol. LVIII (1964), 60-71.

_____. "Urban-Rural Factionalism in the Ohio Legislature." In Charles Press and Charles A. Adrian, Democracy in the Fifty States. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1966, pp. 358-366.

Friedman, Robert S. "The Urban-Rural Conflict Revisited." Western Political Quarterly, XIV (June 1961).

Frost, Richard T. "On Derge's Metropolitan and Outstate Legislative Delegations." American Political Science Review (December 1958).

Furno, Orlando F. "The Cost-Quality Relationship." In Financing the Changing School Program. Washington, D.C.: NEA Committee on Educational Finance, 1962, pp. 38-46.

_____. "Financing Public Education in a Big City." The Proceedings of the Seventh National Conference on School Finance, NEA (April 1964), pp. 66-71.

Fry, Brian R. and Richard F. Winters. "The Politics of Redistribution." American Political Science Review, Vol. LXII, No. 2 (June 1970), p. 521.

Garms, Walter I. "The Financial Characteristics and Problems of Large School Districts." Educational Administration Quarterly, Vol. III (Winter 1967), 14-27.

Gold, David and John R. Schmidhauser. "Urbanization and Party Competition: The Case of Iowa." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. IV (February 1960), 62-75.

Goldberg, Arthur L. "The Statistics of Malapportionment." Yale Law Journal (1962), 90-106.

Gregor, James A. "Political Science and the Uses of Functional Analysis." American Political Science Review, Vol. LXII, No. 2 (June 1968), 428-440.

Grumm, John. "A Factor Analysis of Legislative Behavior." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. VII (1963), 336-356.

Hacker, Andrew. "Reapportionment: Who Will Benefit?" Challenge (February 1963), 4-7.

Hamilton, H. D., J. E. Beardsley, and C. C. Coats. "Legislative Reapportionment in Indiana: Some Observations and a Suggestion." Notre Dame Law Review, Vol. XXXV (May 1960), 368-404.

Hawkins, Brett W. "Consequences of Reapportionment in Georgia." In Richard I. Hofferbert and Ira Sharkansky, eds. State and Urban Politics: Readings in Comparative Public Policy. Boston: Little, Brown, 1971, pp. 273-298.

_____. "Life Style, Demographic Distance and Voter Support of City-County Consolidation." Southwestern Social Science Quarterly, Vol. XLVIII, No. 3 (December 1967), 325-338.

Hirsch, Werner Z. "Planning Education Today for Tomorrow." Urban Affairs Quarterly, Vol. II (September 1966).

Hofferbert, Richard I. "The Relation between Public Policy and Some Structural and Environmental Variables in the American States." American Political Science Review, Vol. LX (March 1966), 73-82.

_____. "Socio-Economic Dimensions of the American States: 1890-1960." Midwest Journal of Politics, Vol. XII (August 1968), 401-418.

Hogan, Lloyd L. "Financial Characteristics of High Expenditure Districts in New York State." The Challenge of Change in School Finance. Washington, D.C.: NEA Committee on Educational Finance, 1967.

Holmstedt, Raleigh Warren. "State Control of Public School Finance." Bulletin of the School of Education. Bloomington: Bureau of Cooperative Research, University of Indiana, 1940.

Hornbosten, Victor O. "Financial Problems of Small School Systems." The Challenge of Change in School Finance, CEF, NEA, 1967, 108-113.

Iannacconne, Laurence. "The Future of State Politics in Education." In Frank W. Lutz and Joseph J. Azzarelli, eds. Struggle for Power in Education. The Library of Education Series. New York: The Center for Applied Research in Education, 1966.

Jacob, Herbert. "The Consequences of Malapportionment: A Note of Caution." Social Forces, Vol. XLIII (December 1964), 256-261.

_____ and Michael Lipsky. "Outputs, Structure, and Power: An Assessment of Changes in the Study of State and Local Politics." Journal of Politics, Vol. XXX (May 1968), 510-538.

Jewell, Malcolm. "Metropolitan Representation: State Legislative Districting in Urban Counties." New York: National Municipal League, 1969.

Jewell, Malcolm. "Party Voting in American State Legislatures." American Political Science Review, Vol. XLIX (1955), 773-791.

_____. "The Political Setting." In Alexander Heard, ed. State Legislatures in American Politics. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1966, pp. 70-97.

Kee, Woo Sik. "Central City Expenditures and Metropolitan Areas." National Tax Journal, Vol. XVIII, No. 4 (December 1965), 337-354.

Keefe, William J. "The Functions and Powers of the State Legislature." In Heard, Alexander, ed. State Legislature in American Politics. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1966.

_____. "Parties, Partnerships, and Public Policy in the Pennsylvania Legislature." American Political Science Review, Vol. XLVIII (1954), 450.

Knezevich, S. J. "What's Ahead in Financing Education." New Directions in Financing Public Schools, NEA (1960), 25-31.

LeBlanc, Hugh L. "Voting in State Senates: Party and Constituency Factors." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XIII (February 1969).

Liebman, Charles. "Functional Differentiation and Political Characteristics of Suburbs." American Journal of Sociology, Vol. LXVI (May 1961), 385-490.

Lindblom, Charles. "Decision-Making in Taxation and Expenditure." In Public Finances: Needs, Sources and Utilization. Princeton, New Jersey: National Bureau of Economic Research, 1961.

Lindman, Eric L. "The Local State-Federal School Finance Partnership." Trends in Financing Public Education. Washington, D.C.: NEA, 1965, pp. 46-50.

_____. "Outlook for Public School Finance." The Proceedings of the Seventh National Conference on School Finance. NRA (April 1964), pp. 10-16.

_____. "State School Finance Reflects its Times." Long-Range Planning in School Finance. Washington, D.C.: Committee on Educational Finance, NEA, 1963, pp. 36-41.

McKay, Robert B. "The Federal Analogy and State Apportionment Standards." Notre Dame Lawyer (August 1963), 487-498.

McLoone, Eugene P. "Modernizing State School Finance Programs: Six Selected Areas." Interdependence in School Finance: The City, The State, The Nation. Washington, D.C.: Committee on Educational Finance, NEA, 1968, pp. 21-33.

_____ and Harrison W. Forrest. "New Studies in School Finance and their Implications." The Proceedings of the Seventh National Conference on School Finance. Washington, D.C.: NEA, April 1964.

MacRae, Duncan, Jr. "The Relation between Roll Call Votes and Constituencies in the Massachusetts House of Representatives." American Political Science Review, Vol. XLVI (1952), 1046-1055.

_____. "Some Underlying Variables in Legislative Roll Call Votes." Public Opinion Quarterly, Vol. XVIII (1954), 191-196.

Maslow, Will. "Reapportionment: Breaking the Rural Strangle Hold." Nation (April 6, 1963), 282-285.

Massotti, Louis H. and Don R. Bowen. "Communities and Budgets: The Sociology of Municipal Expenditures." Urban Affairs Quarterly, Vol. I, No. 2 (December 1965), 39-58.

Meltz, David. "Legislative Party Cohesion: A Model of the Bargaining Process in State Legislatures." (Unpublished)

Miller, Warren E. and Donald E. Stokes. "Constituency Influence in Congress." American Political Science Review, Vol. LVII (1963), 45-66.

Morse, Elliot R. "Some Thoughts on the Determinants of State and Local Expenditures." National Tax Journal, Vol. XVIX, No. 1 (March 1966), 95-103.

_____, et al. "Fluctuations in State Expenditures." Southern Economic Journal, Vol. XXXIII (April 1967), 496-516.

Moynihan, Daniel, ed. "Equal Opportunity." Harvard Education Review, Vol. XXXVII, No. 1 (Winter 1968), 1-84.

Mushkin, Selma J. "Intergovernmental Aspects of Local Expenditure Decisions." In Public Expenditure Decisions in the Urban Community.

National Municipal League. "State Legislatures and the Crisis in the Cities." By William G. Coleman. State Legislatures Progress Reporter, Vol. II (March 1967), 5-6.

Orshansky, Mollie. "Children of the Poor." In Daniel Schrieber, ed. The Profile of the School Dropout. New York: Vintage Books, 1968, pp. 60-84.

Osman, Jack. "The Dual Impact of Federal Aid on State and Local Expenditures." National Tax Journal, Vol. XVII, No. 1, 75-86.

Ostrom, Vincent, Charles M. Tiebout and Robert Warren. "The Organization of Government in Metropolitan Areas: A Theoretical Inquiry." American Political Science Review, Vol. LV (December 1961), 831-842.

Page, Thomas. Legislative Apportionment in Kansas. Lawrence: Bureau of Government Research, University of Kansas, 1952, p. 149.

_____. "Urban-Rural Divisions in the Kansas Legislature." In Charles Press and Charles R. Adrian. Democracy in the Fifty States. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1966.

Patterson, Samuel C. "Dimensions of Voting Behavior in a One-Party State Legislature." Public Opinion Quarterly, Vol. XXVI (Summer 1962), 185-210.

Pauly, Mark V. "Mixed Public and Private Financing of Education: Efficiency and Feasibility." American Economic Review, Vol. LVII, 120-130.

Press, Charles and Charles R. Adrian. "Why Our State Governments are Sick." In Democracy in the Fifty States. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1966, pp. 346-358.

Pritchett, C. Herman. "Equal Protection and the Urban Majority." American Political Science Review, Vol. LVIII, No. 4 (December 1964), 869-875.

Pulsipher, Allan G., and James L. Weatherby, Jr. "Malapportionment, Party Competition and the Functional Distribution of Government Expenditures." American Political Science Review, Vol. LXII (December 1968), 1207-1219.

Renshaw, Edward I. "A Note on the Expenditure Effect of Aid to Education." Journal of Political Economy, Vol. LXVII (April 1960), 170-174.

Rossmiller, Richard A. "The Equalization Objective in State Support Programs: An Analysis of Measures, Need and Ability." National Tax Journal, Vol. XVIII, No. 4 (December 1965), 362-369.

Sacks, Seymour. "The Educational Dimension of Large City School Finances in their Metropolitan Context: A Comparative Analysis." The Challenge of Change in School Finance. Washington, D.C.: Committee on Educational Finance, NEA, 1967.

Salisbury, Robert H. "The Analysis of Public Policy: A Search for Theories and Roles." In Austin Ranney, ed. Political Science and Public Policy. Chicago: Markham, 1968, p. 158.

_____. "St. Louis Politics: Relationships among Interests, Parties and Governmental Structure." The Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XIII, No. 2.

_____. "Schools and Politics in the Big City." Harvard Educational Review, Vol. XXXVII (Summer 1967), 408-424.

_____. "State Politics and Education." In Politics in the American States, Herbert Jacob and Kenneth Vines, eds. New York: Little, Brown, 1965.

Schlesinger, Joseph A. A review of Martin Lipset's Politics and the Social Sciences (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969), in American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIV (September 1970), 910-911.

Schmandt, Henry J. and G. Ross Stephens. "Local Government Expenditure." Land Economics, Vol. XXXIX (November 1963), 397-406.

Schmidt, A. W. "Analysis of State-Federal Problems." New Directions in Financing Public Schools. Washington, D.C.: NEA, 1960, pp. 50-58.

Schnore, Leo F. "The Growth of Metropolitan Suburbs." American Sociological Review, Vol. XXII (April 1957), 165-173.

Schubert, Glendon and Charles Press. "Measuring Malapportionment." American Political Science Review, Vol. LVIII (June 1964), 302-327.

Shannon, John. "The Role of the State in Equalizing Educational Opportunity." The Challenge of Change in School Finance. Washington, D.C.: Committee on Educational Finance, NEA, 1967, pp. 31-47.

Sharkansky, Ira. "Economic Development, Regionalism, and State Political Systems." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XII (February 1968), 41-61.

_____. "Economic and Political Correlates of State and Government Expenditures: General Tendencies and Deviant Cases." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XI (May 1967), 173-192.

Sharkansky, Ira. "Voting Behavior of Metropolitan Congressmen: Prospects for Changes with Reapportionment." Journal of Politics, Vol. XXVIII, No. 4 (November 1966), 774-793.

_____ and Richard I. Hofferbert. "Dimensions of State Politics, Economics and Public Policy." American Political Science Review, Vol. LXIII (September 1969), 867-869.

_____ and Augustus B. Turnbull, III. "Budget-Making in Georgia and Wisconsin: A Test of a Model." Midwest Journal of Political Science (November 1968), 223-238.

Shull, Charles. "Malapportionment in the States." Law and Contemporary Problems, Vol. XVII (1952), 417-439.

Stephens, G. Ross and Henry J. Schmandt. "Revenue Patterns of Local Governments." National Tax Journal, Vol. XV, No. 4 (December 1962), 432-436.

Taylor, Harold. "The New Coalition." Trends in Financing Public Education. Washington, D.C.: NEA, 1965, pp. 22-29.

Titus, J. E. "Democracy and Metropolitan Representation." Southwestern Social Science Quarterly (June 1963), 25-34.

West, Allen M. "The Problem is Money." New Directions in Financing Public Schools. Washington, D.C.: NEA, 1960, pp. 67-73.

White, John P. and Norman C. Thomas. "Urban and Rural Representation and State Legislative Apportionment." Western Political Quarterly, Vol. XVII, No. 4 (December 1964), 724-741.

Wiggins, Charles W. "Party Politics in the Iowa Legislature." Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol. XI (1967), 88.

Williams, Oliver P. "Life Style Values and Political Decentralization in Metropolitan Areas." Southwestern Social Science Quarterly, Vol. XLVIII, No. 3 (December 1967), 299-310.

Zimmer, Basil G. and Amos H. Hawley. "Opinions on School District Reorganization in Metropolitan Areas: A Comparative Analysis of the Views of Citizens and Officials of Central City Suburban Areas." Southwestern Science Quarterly, Vol. XLVIII, No. 3 (December 1967), 311-324.

Documents

Advisory Commission on Intergovernmental Relations. Apportionment of State Legislatures. Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1962.

_____. Fiscal Balance in the American Federal System, Vol. II. Washington, D.C.: GPO, October 1967.

_____. Governmental Structure, Organization, and Planning in Metropolitan Areas. Report A-5. U.S. House of Representatives, Committee on Government Operations (Committee Print), 87th Congress, 1st Session, July 1961.

_____. Measures of State and Local Fiscal Capacity and Tax Effort. Washington, D.C.: GPO, 1962.

_____. Metropolitan America: Challenge to Federalism. Report M-231 (August 1966).

_____. Metropolitan Councils of Government. Report M-32 (August 1966).

_____. Metropolitan Social and Economic Disparities: Implications for Intergovernmental Relations in Central Cities and Suburbs. Report A-25 (January 1965).

_____. Performance of Urban Functions: Local and Areawide. Report M-21 (September 1963).

_____. State Aid to Local Government. Washington, D.C.: GPO, 1969.

Alford, Albert L. Nonproperty Taxation for Schools: Possibilities for Local Application. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1963.

Brady, David and Douglas Edmonds. The Effect of Malapportionment of Policy Output in the American States. Iowa City: Laboratory for Political Research, 1966.

Coleman, James et al. Equality of Educational Opportunity. Washington, D.C.: GPO, 1966.

Harrison, Forrest W. and Eugene P. McLoone. Profiles in School Support: A Decennial Overview. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Office of Education, 1965.

Hirsch, Werner Z. Analysis of the Rising Costs of Public Education. Washington: Joint Economic Committee, 1959.

Lowi, Theodore. "American Business, Public Policy, Case Studies, and Political Theory." World Politics, Vol. LXII (July 1964), 677-715.

Munse, Albert R. Revenue Programs for the Public Schools in the United States, 1950-60. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Department of H.E.W., Office of Education, 1961.

National Commission on Urban Problems. Impact of the Property Tax: Its Economic Implication for Urban Problems. Washington, D.C.: Joint Economic Committee, 1968.

Research and Policy Committee of the Committee for Economic Development. Reshaping Government in Metropolitan Areas. Washington, D.C.: CED, 1970.

Sacks, Seymour, Robert Harris and John J. Carroll. The Role of State Aid. New York State Comptroller's Studies in Local Finance, No. 3. Albany: New York State Department of Audit and Control, 1963.

U.S. Commission on Civil Rights. Racial Isolation in the Public Schools, Vol. I. Washington, D.C.: GPO, 1967.

U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Office of Education. Projections of Educational Statistics, 1974-75. 1965 edition. Washington, D.C.: GPO, 1965.

_____. Public School Finance Programs of the United States, 1957-58. Washington, D.C.: Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1960.

Will, Robert F. State Education: Structure and Organization. Washington, D.C.: H.E.W., Office of Education, 1964.

Williams, Joel and Tobia Bressler. Statistics of Local School Systems: 1955-56, Suburban Cities. Washington, D.C.: H.E.W., 1960.

1846

FIGURE III-1

1960 Metropolitan Population and 1962 Legislative Power

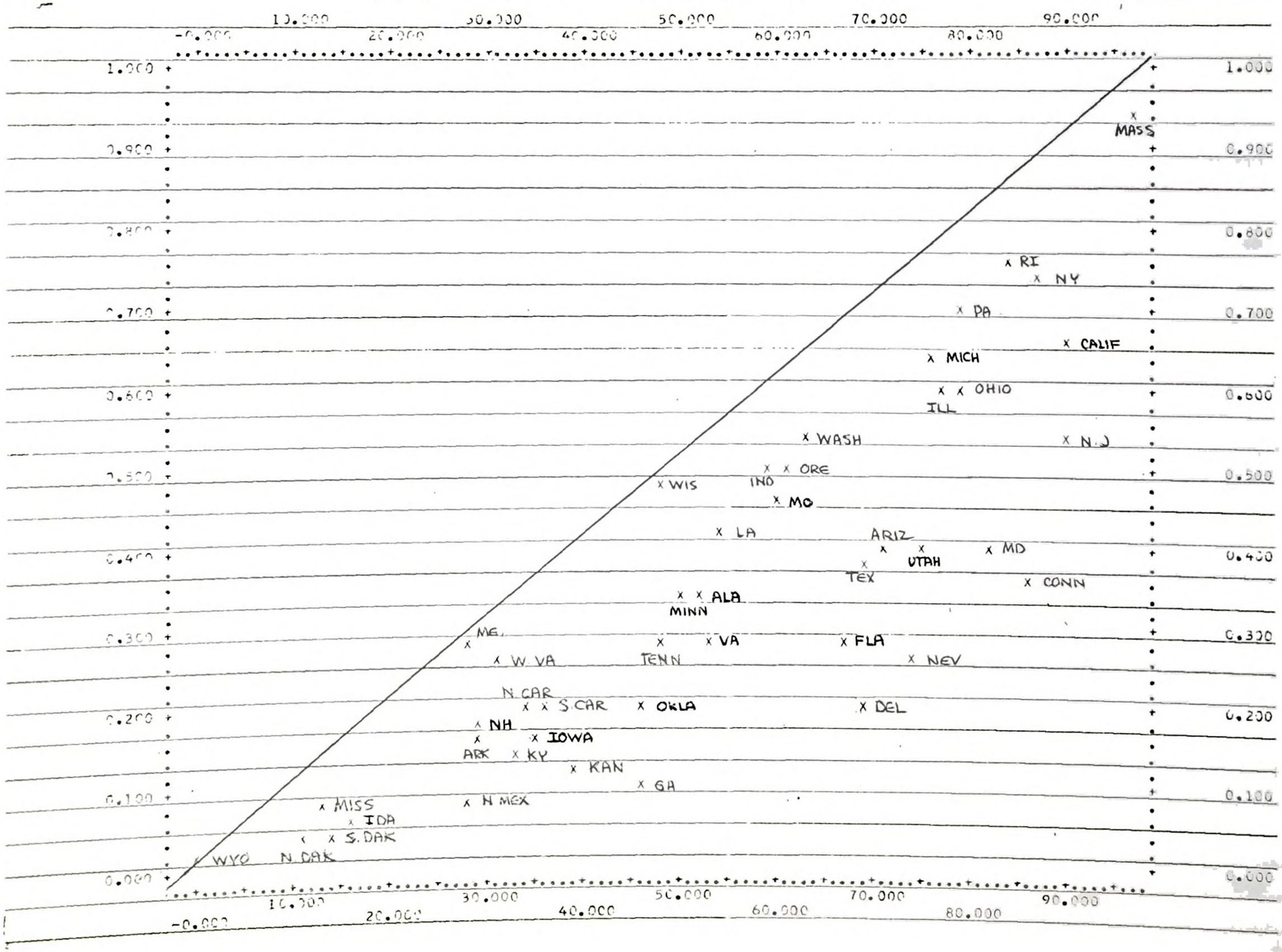




FIGURE III - 2

1960 Metropolitan Population and 1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power

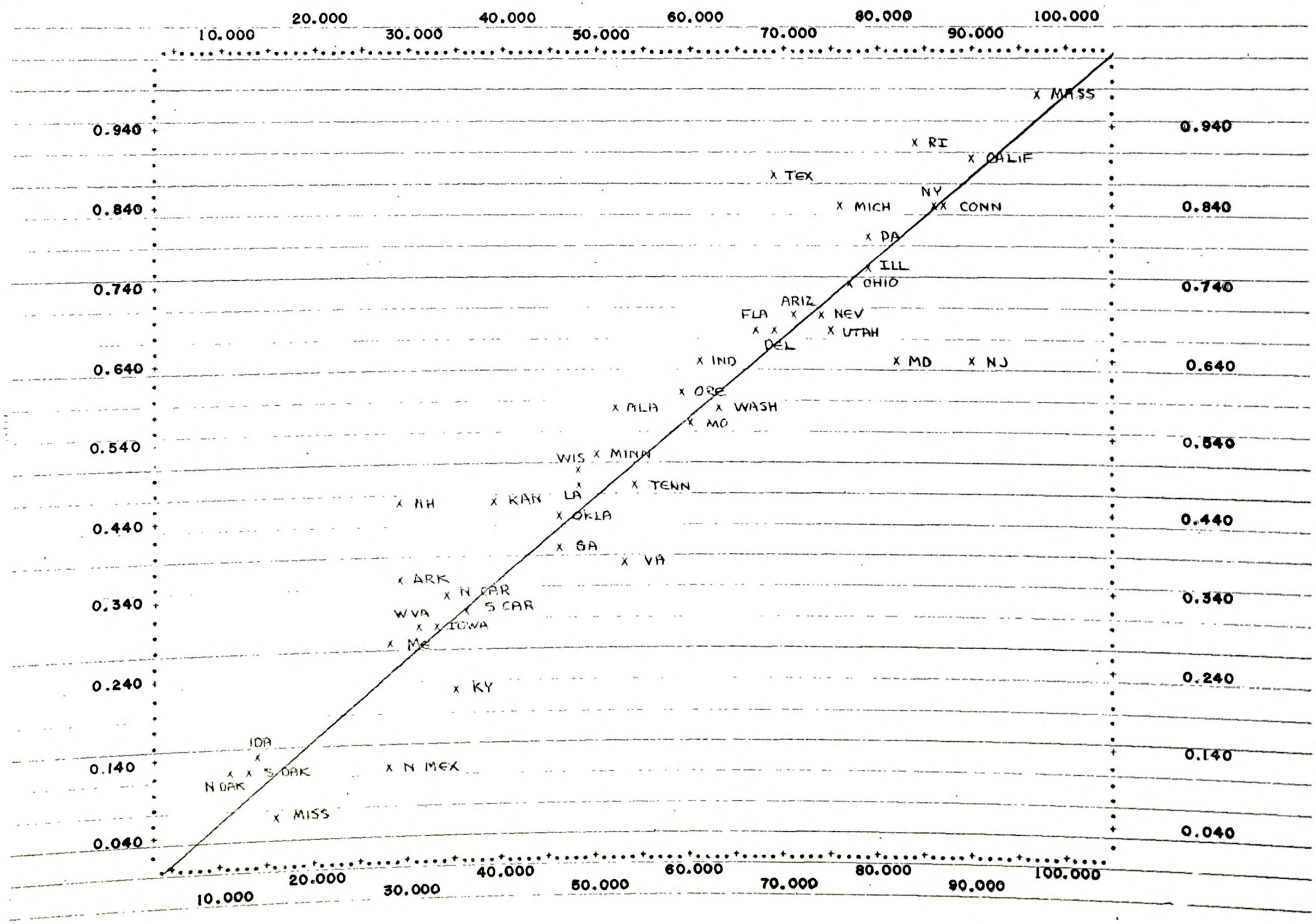
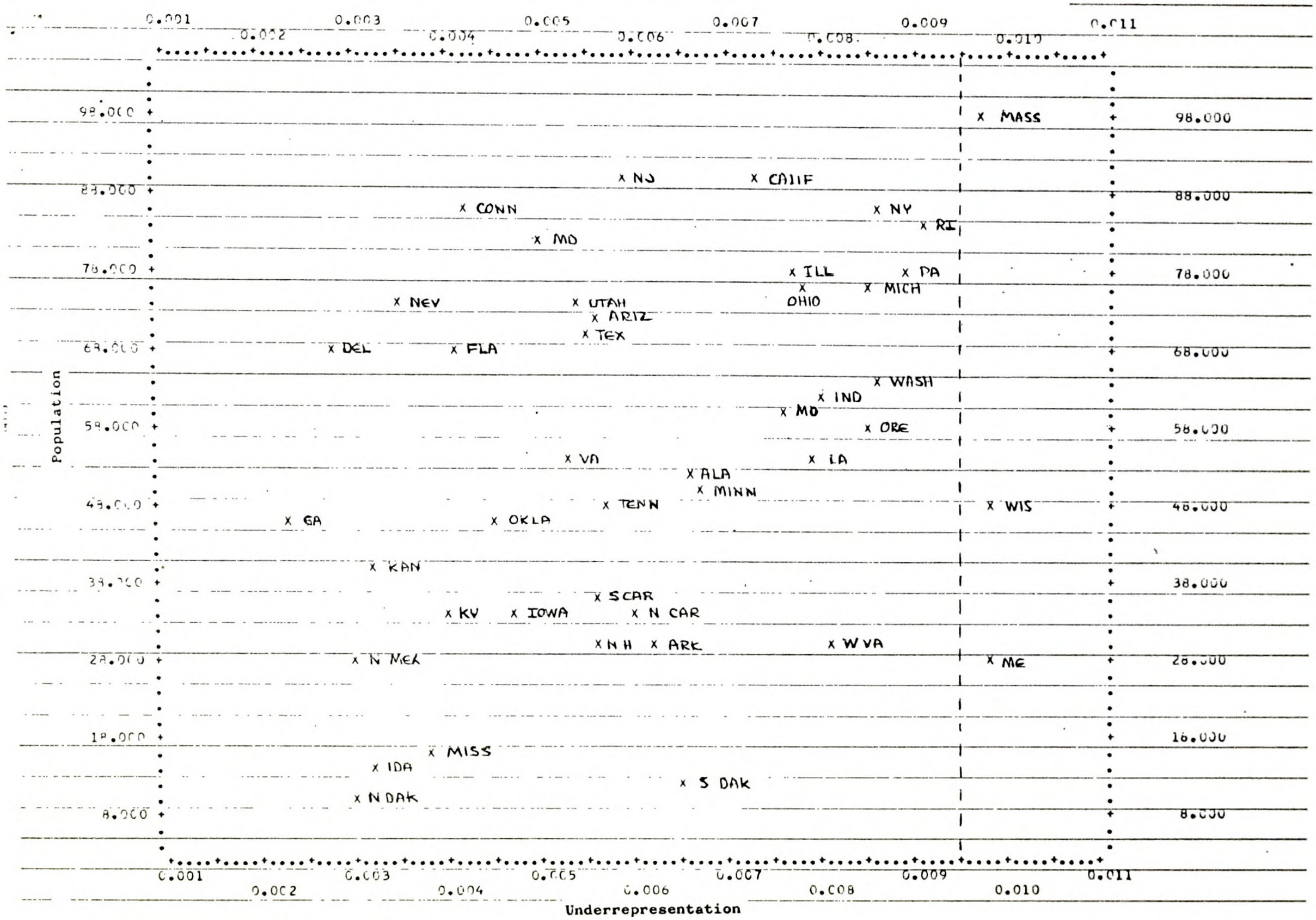


FIGURE III - 3

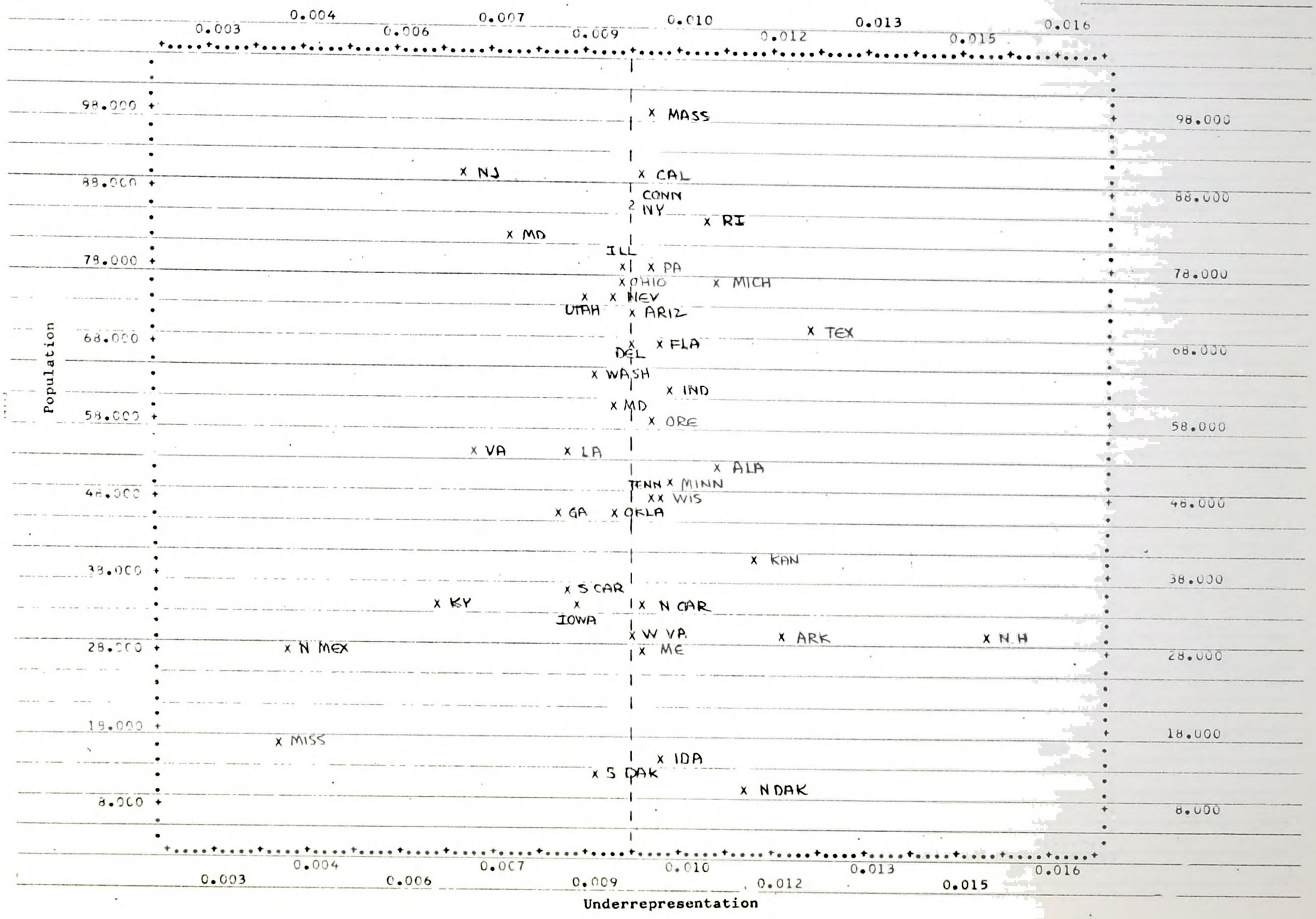
Metropolitan Underrepresentation, 1962



Underrepresentation

FIGURE III - 4

Metropolitan Underrepresentation, 1967



192

FIGURE III - 5

1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power and Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

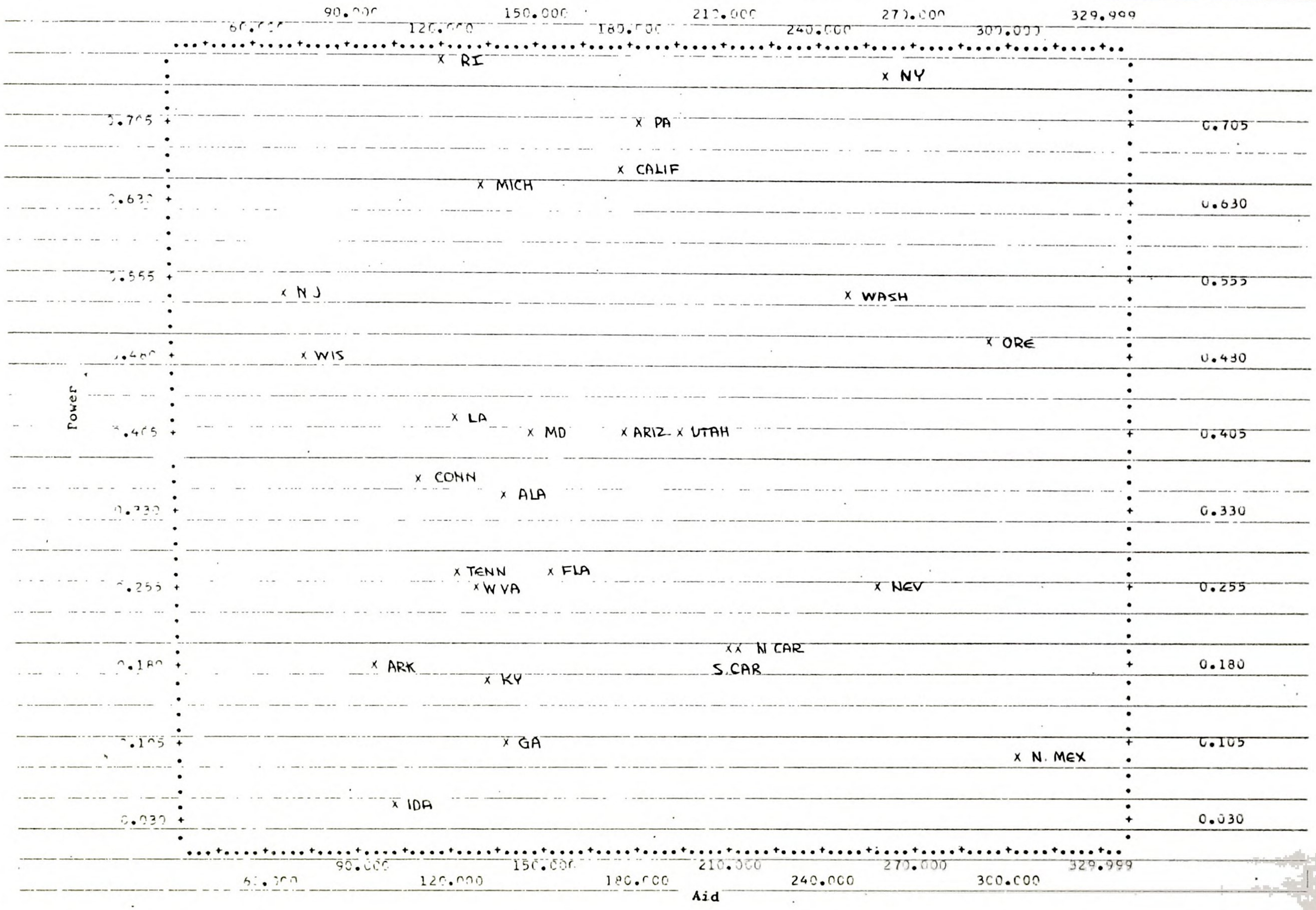


FIGURE III - 6

1962 Metropolitan Legislative Power and Metropolitan Relative Advantage

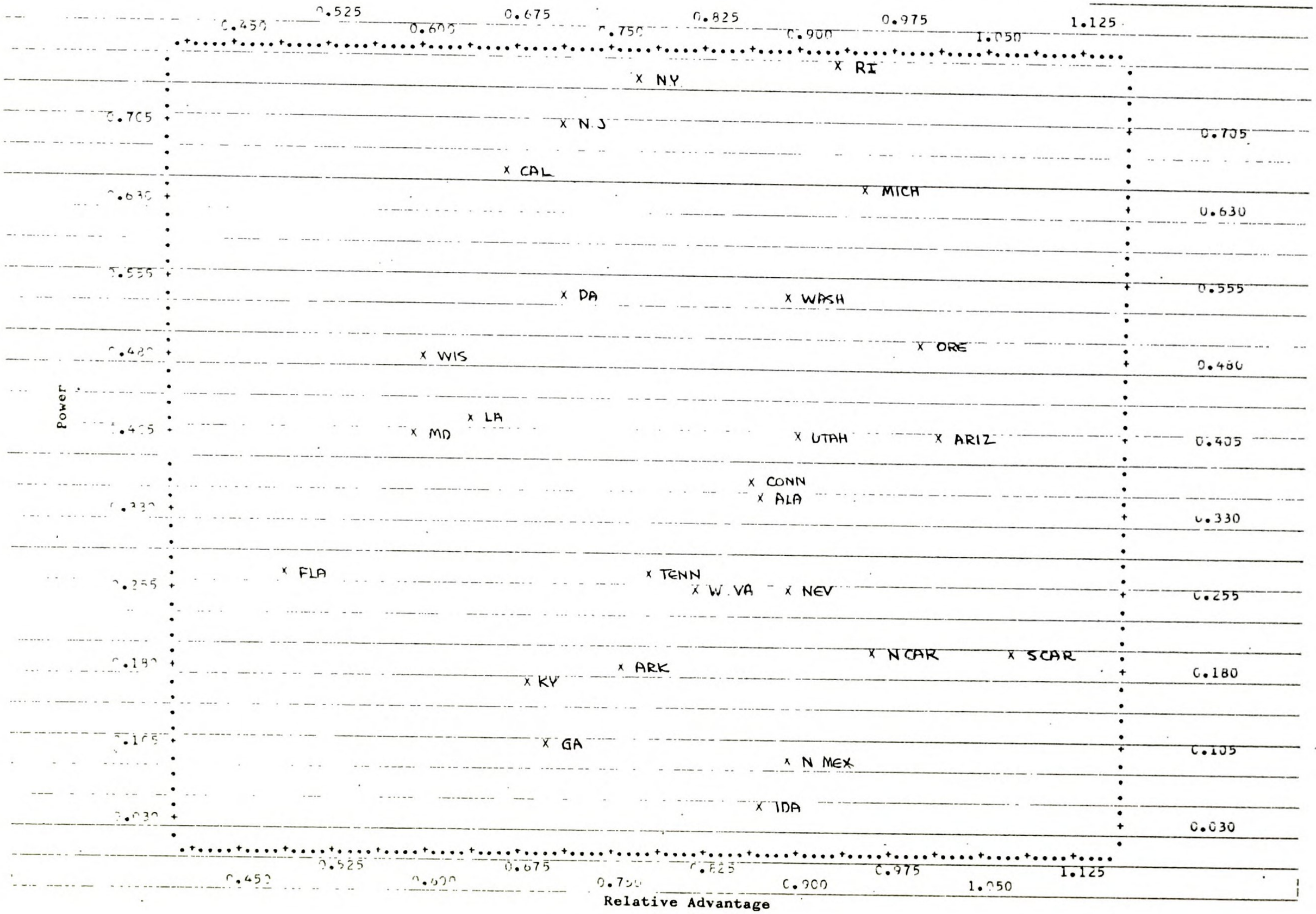


FIGURE III - 7

1967 Metropolitan Legislative Power and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

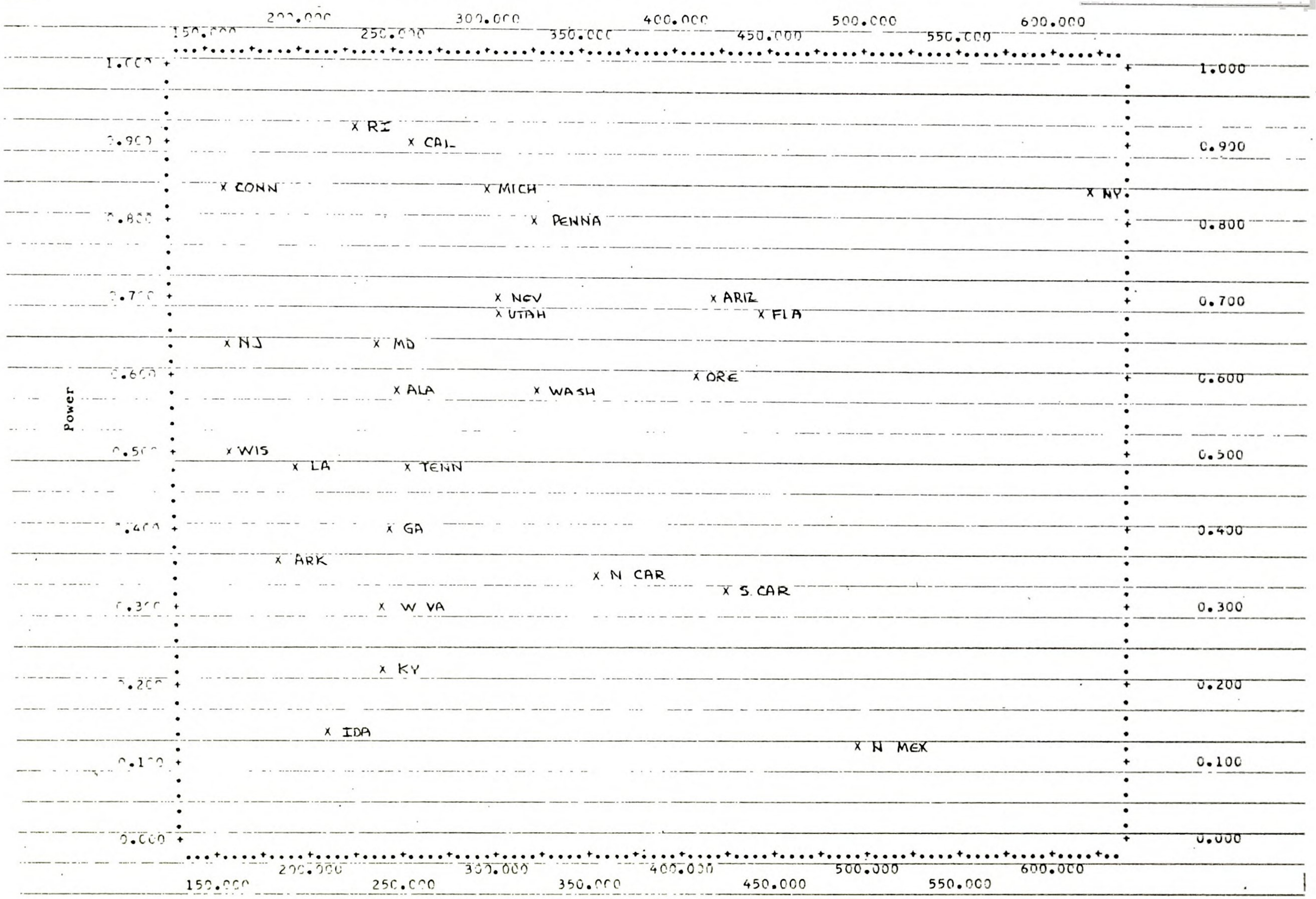


FIGURE V - 8

1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

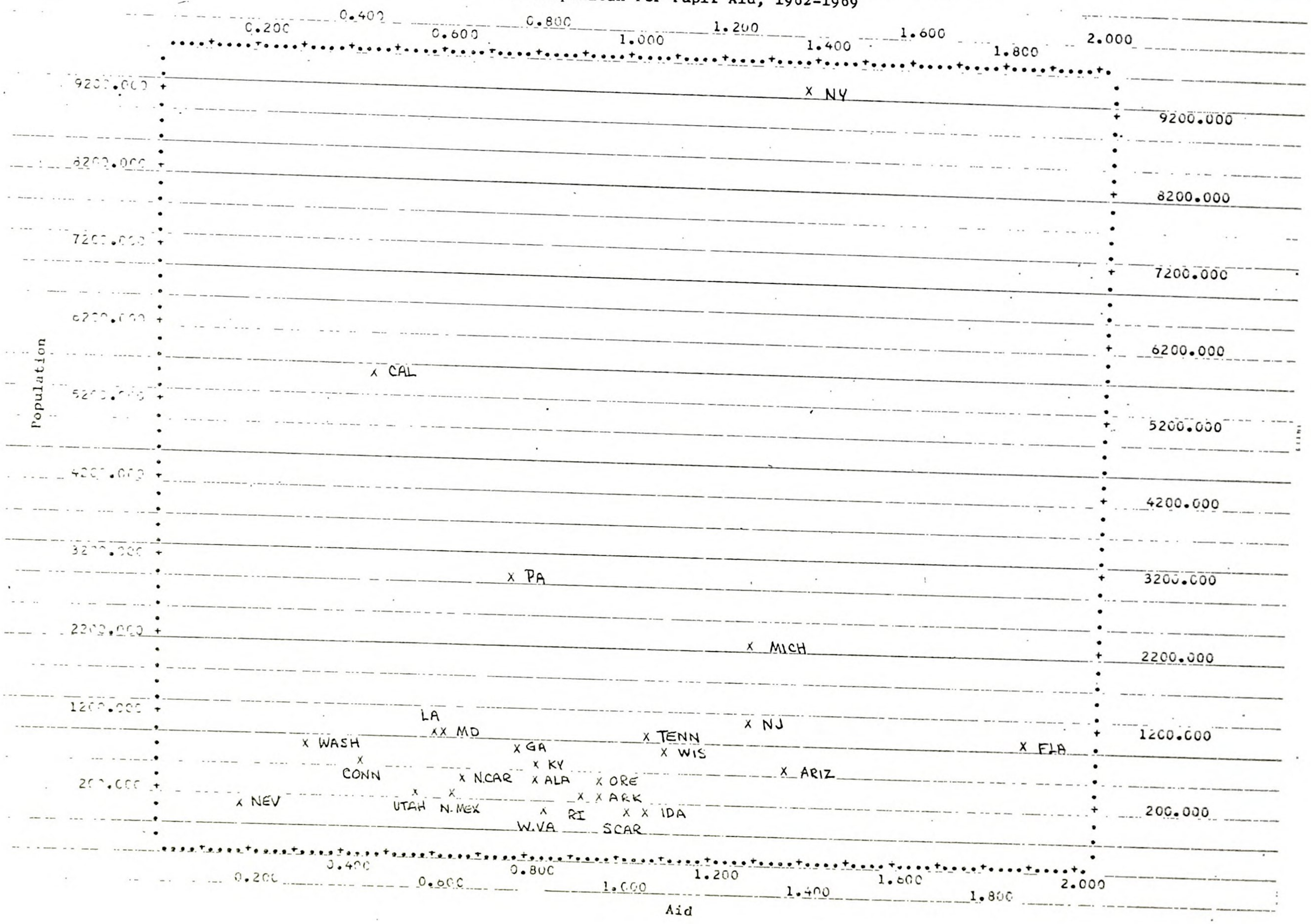


FIGURE III - 9

Change in Metropolitan Legislative Power, 1962-1967 and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

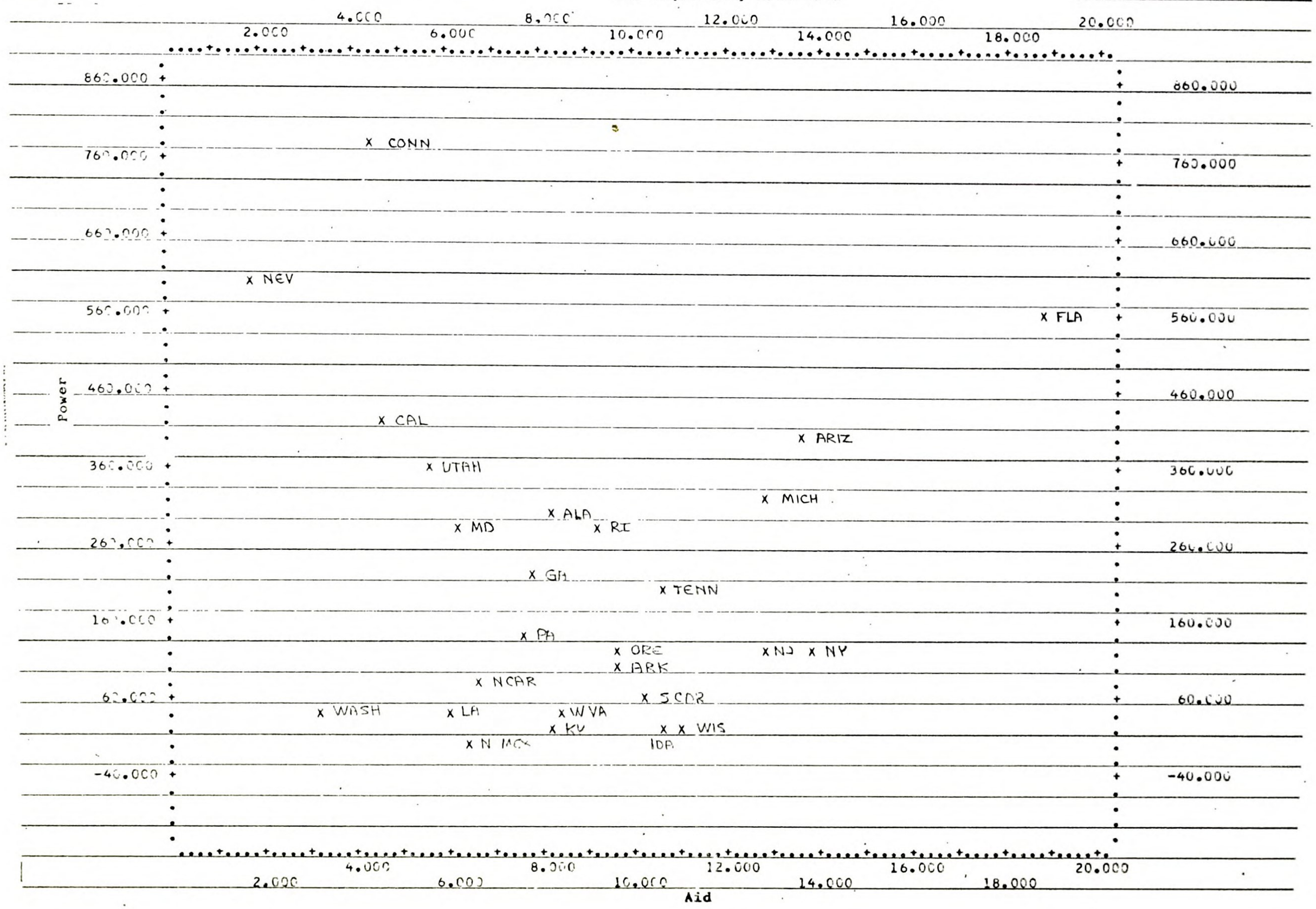


FIGURE III - 10

Change in Metropolitan Legislative Power, 1962-1967 and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969

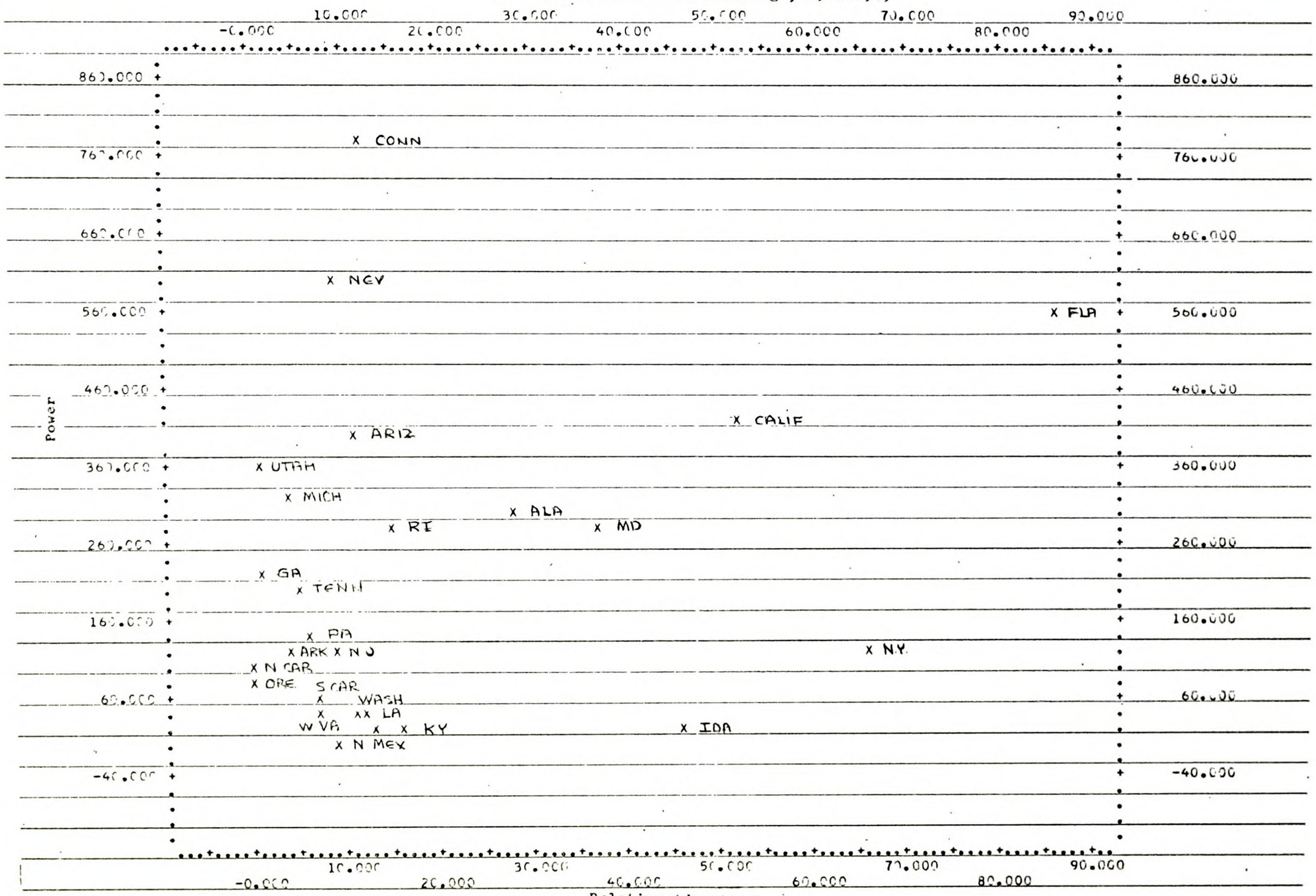


FIGURE III - 11

Change in Metropolitan Legislative Status and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

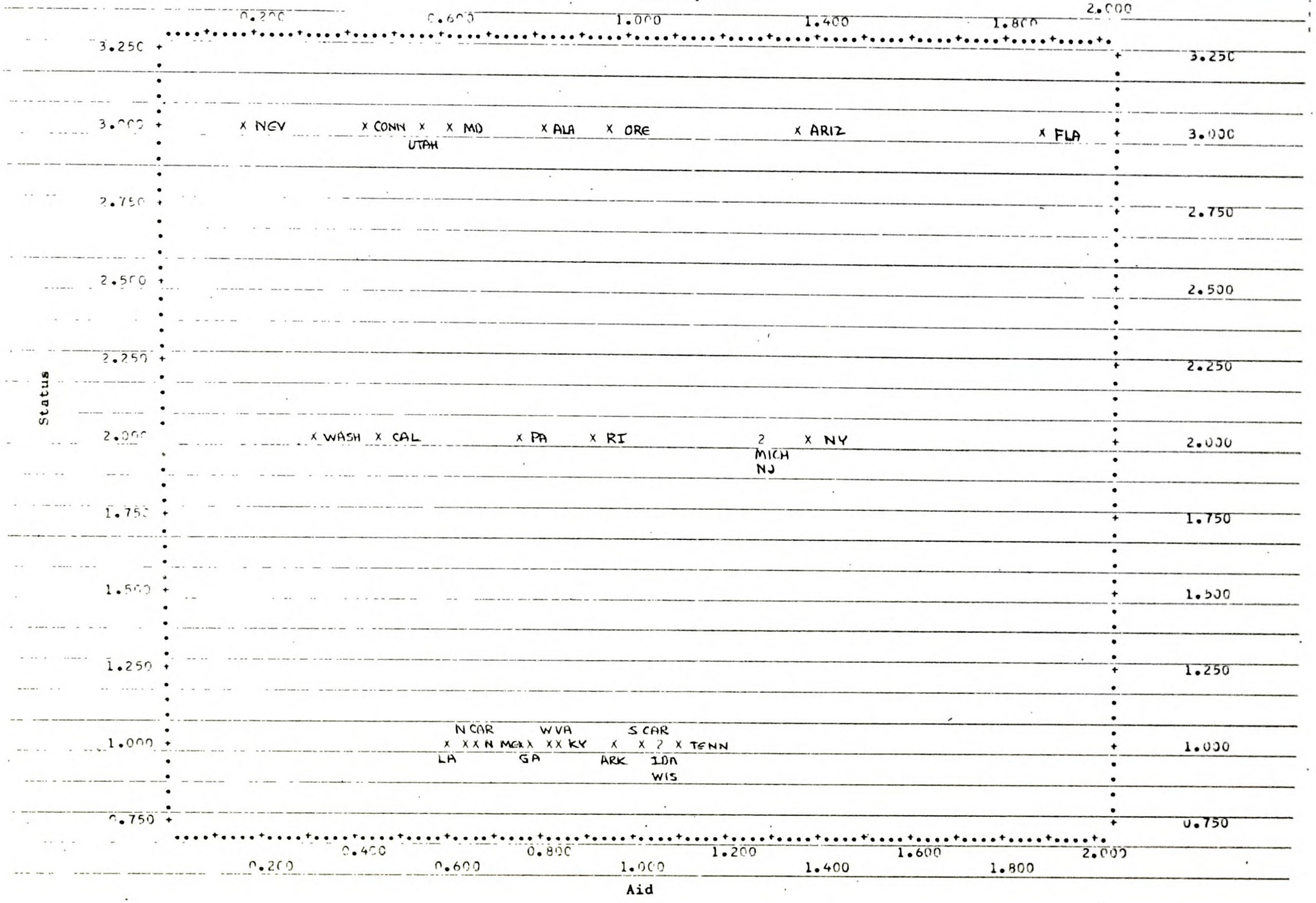


FIGURE III - 12

Change in Metropolitan Legislative Status and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage

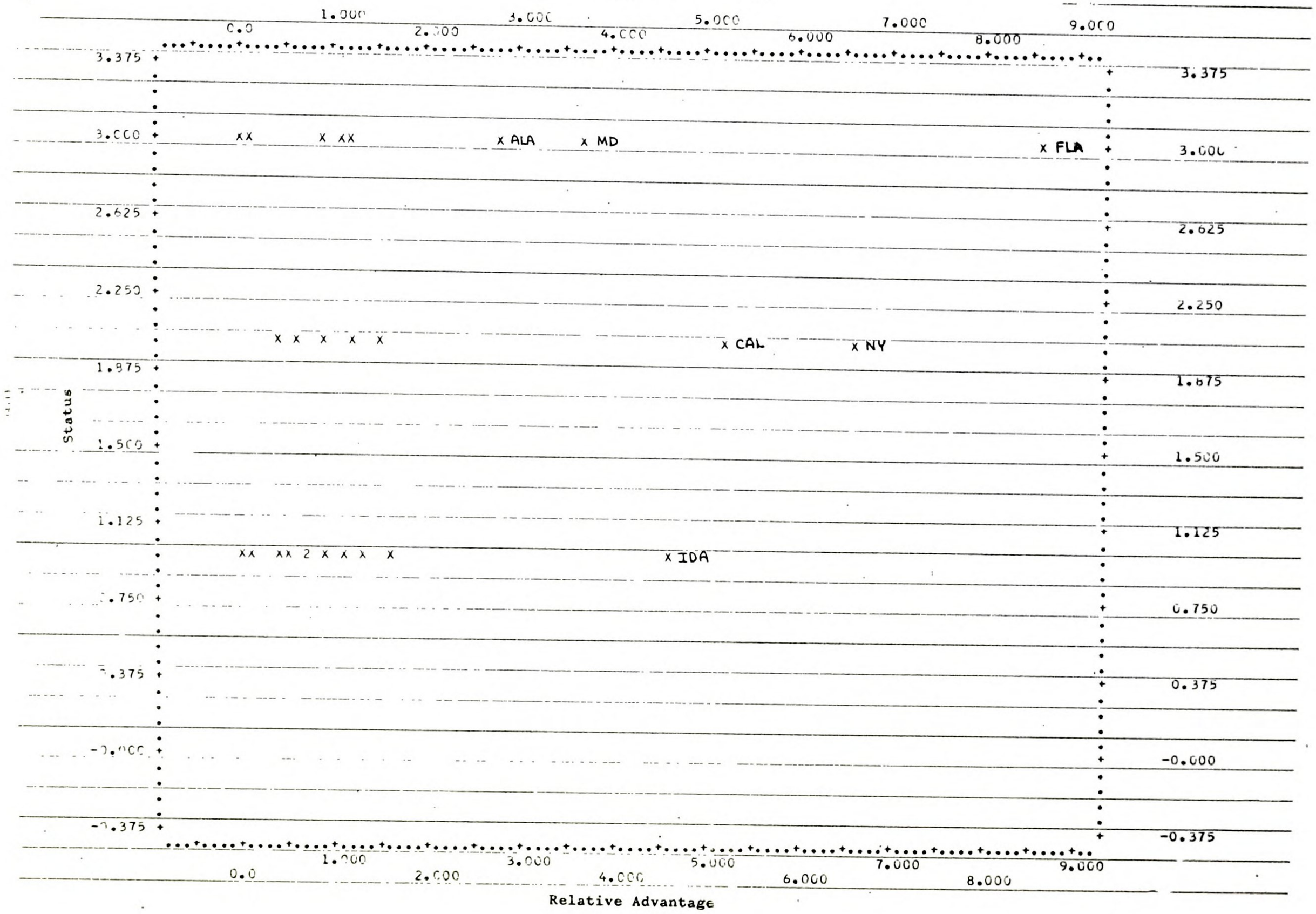


FIGURE IV - 1

1967 Power 2 and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

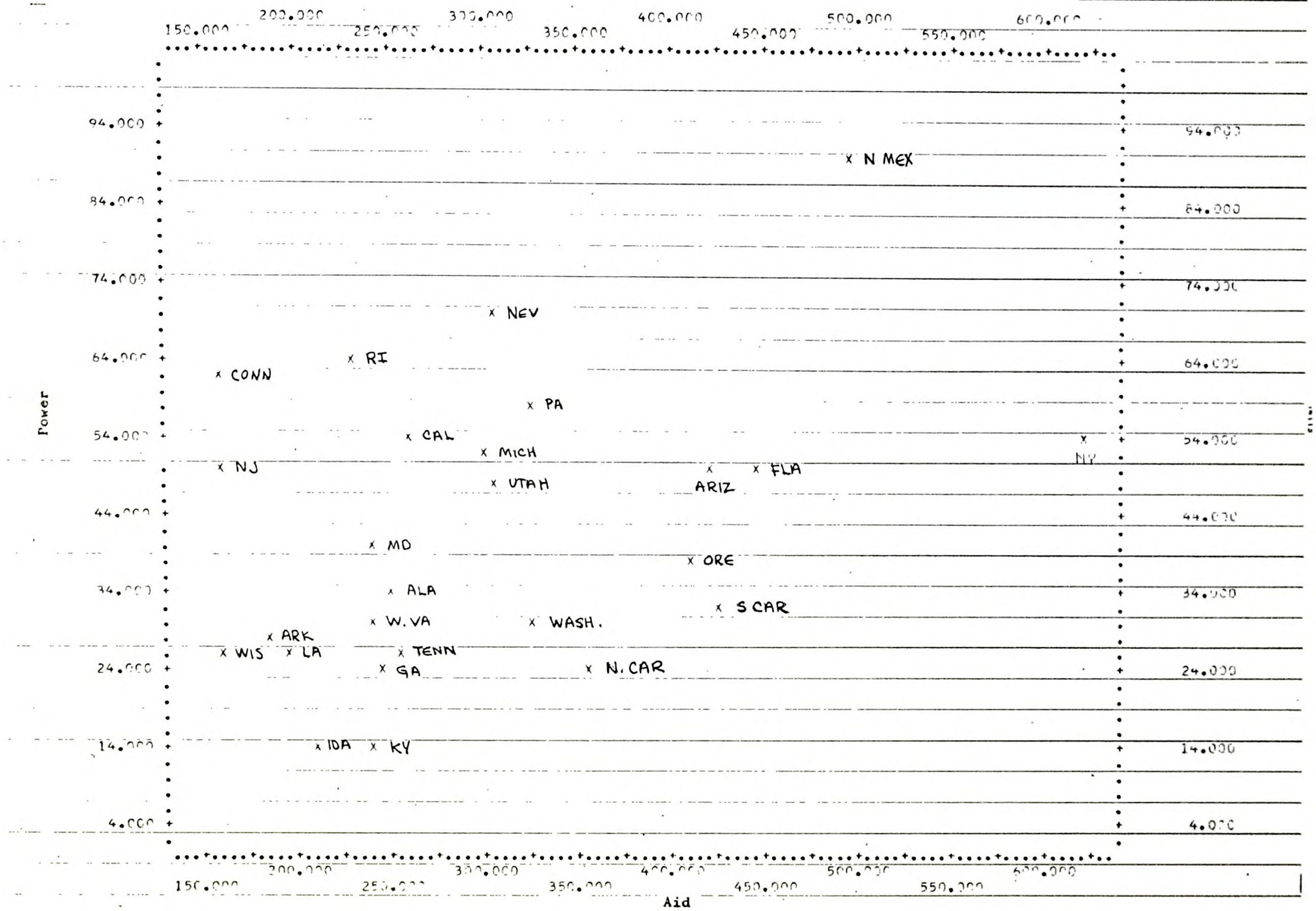


FIGURE IV - 2

1967 Power 2 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

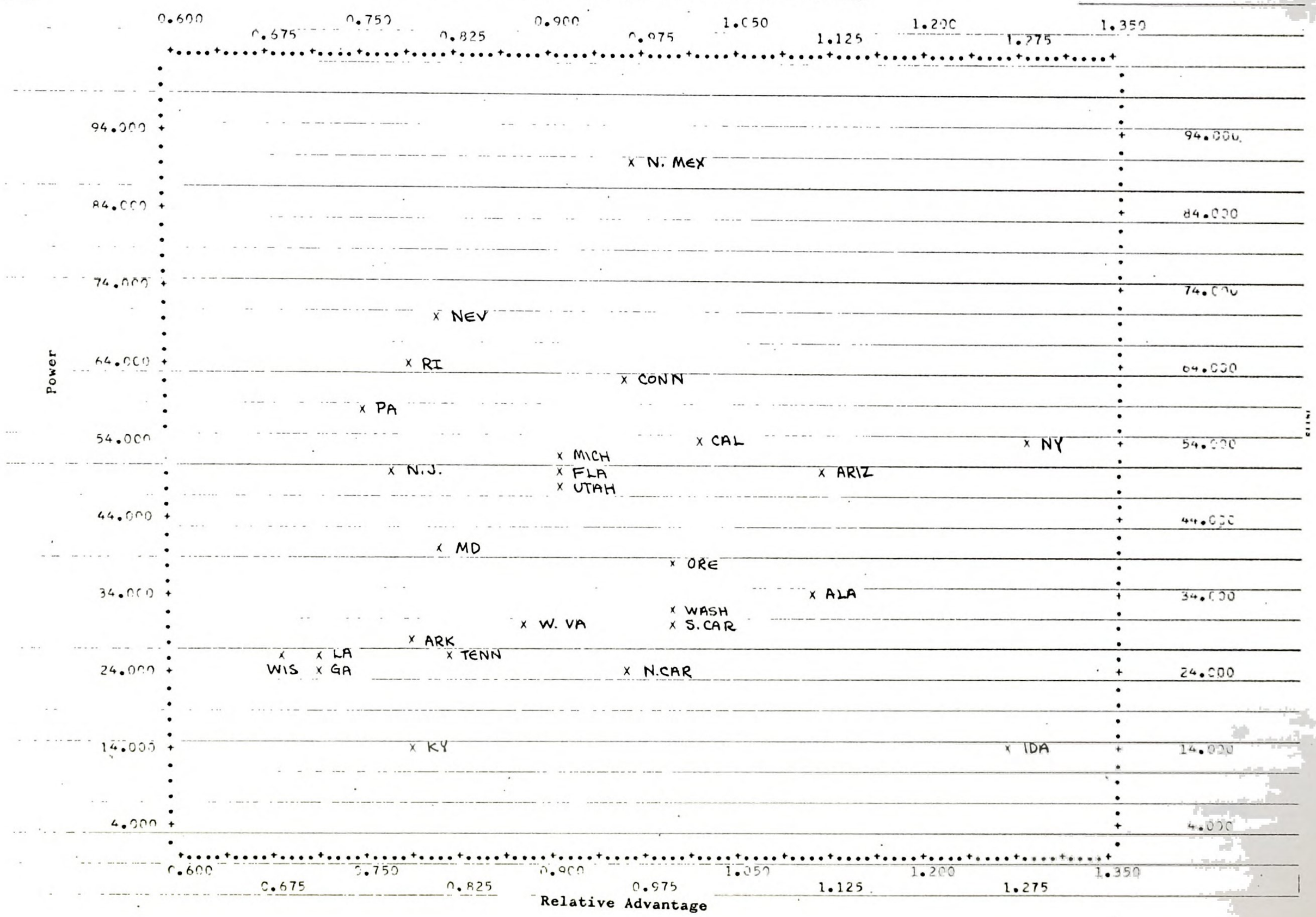


FIGURE IV - 3

1967 Power 3 and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

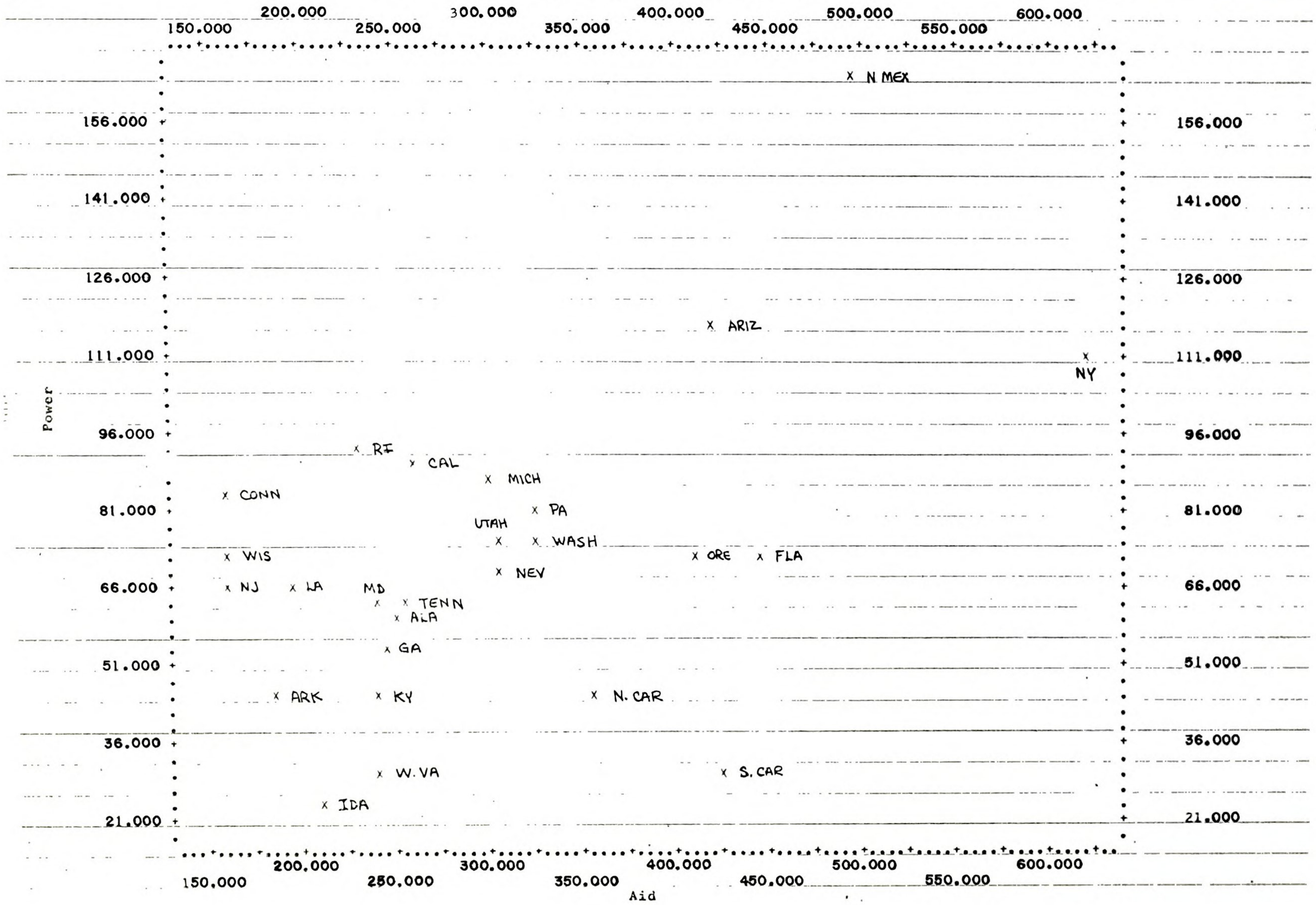


FIGURE IV-4

1967 Power 3 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

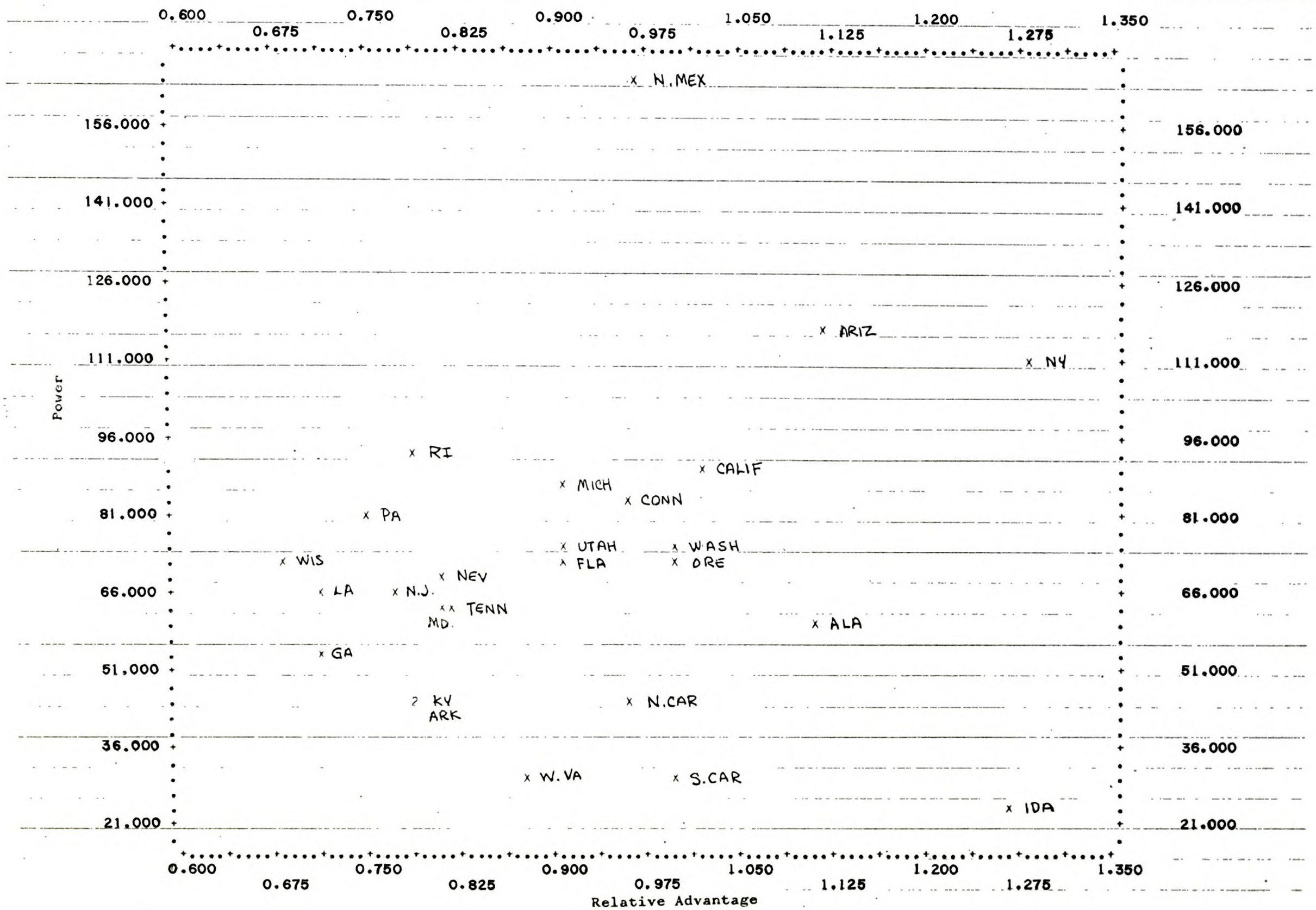


FIGURE V - 1

1966 Per Capita Personal Income and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

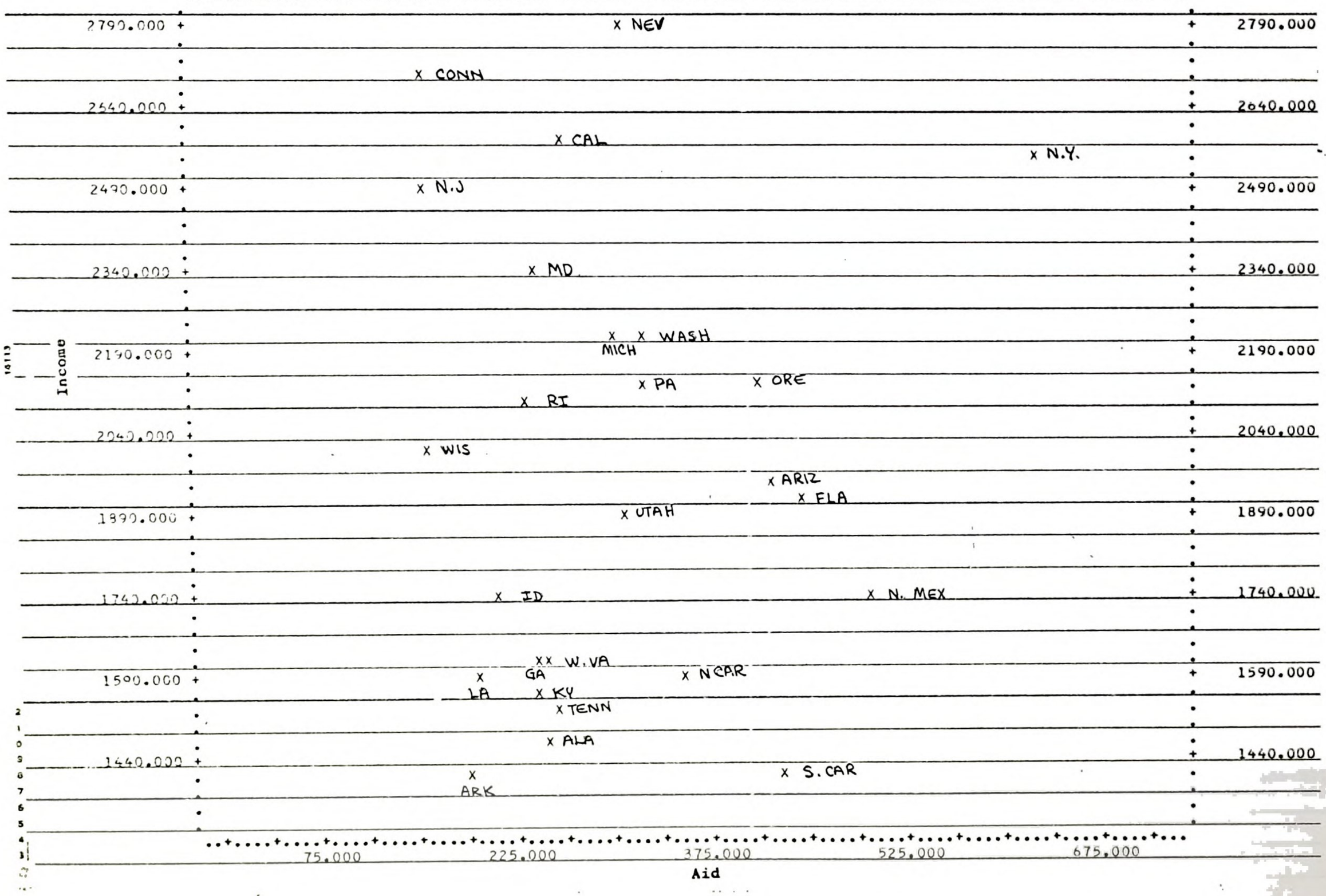


FIGURE V - 2

1966 Per Capita Personal Income and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

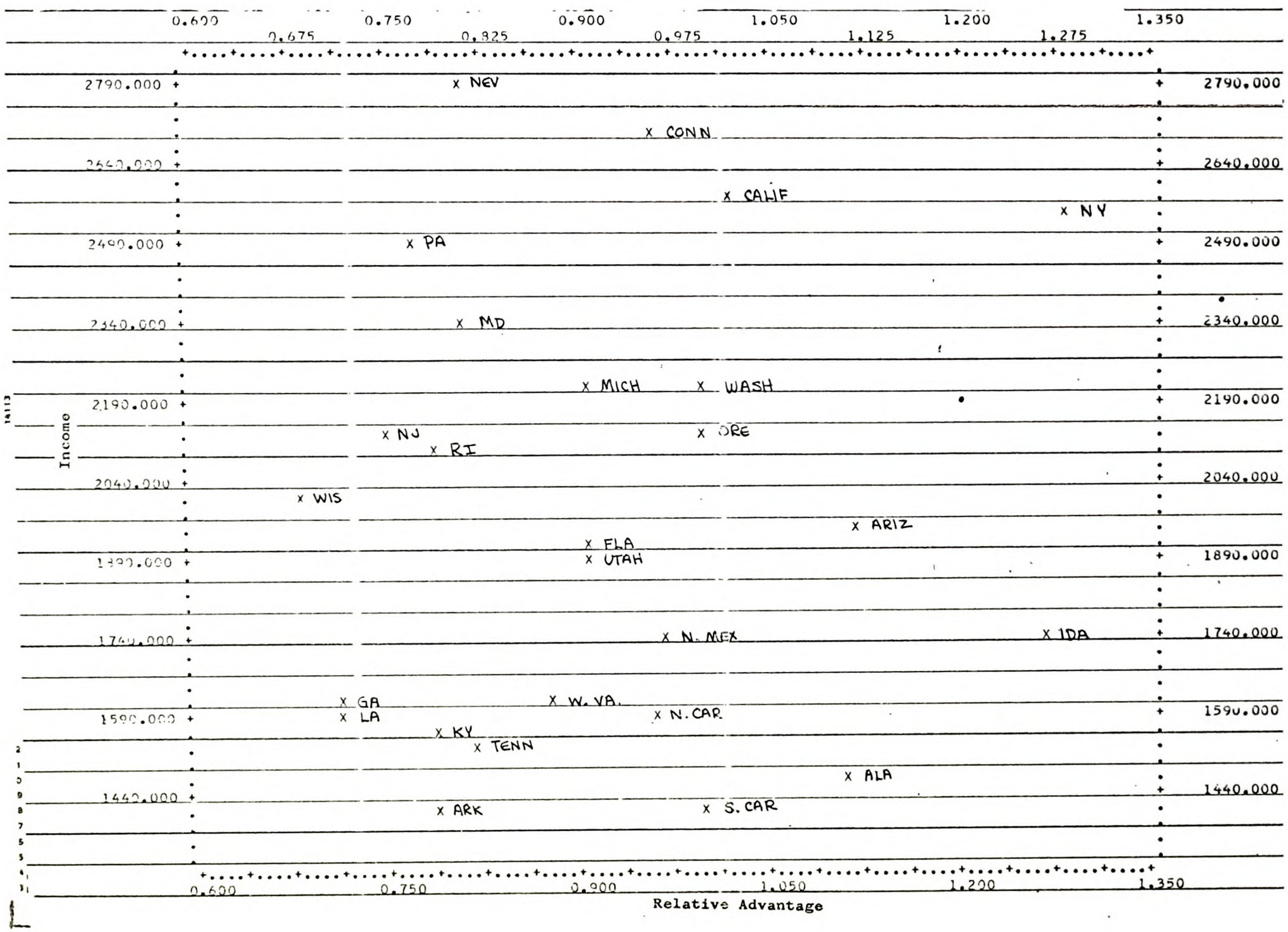


FIGURE V-3

1967 Educational Tax Burden and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

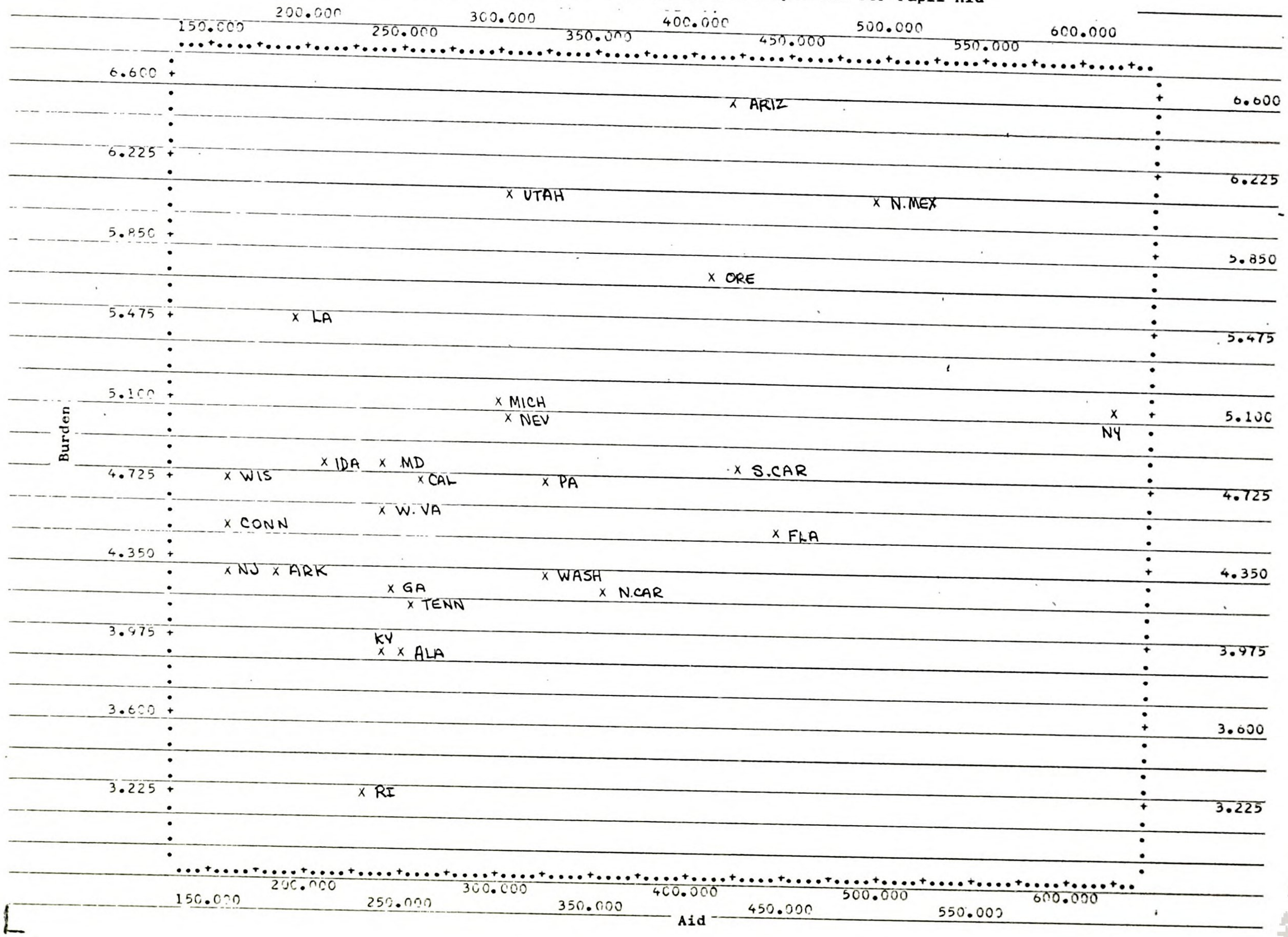


FIGURE V - 4

1967 Educational Tax Burden and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

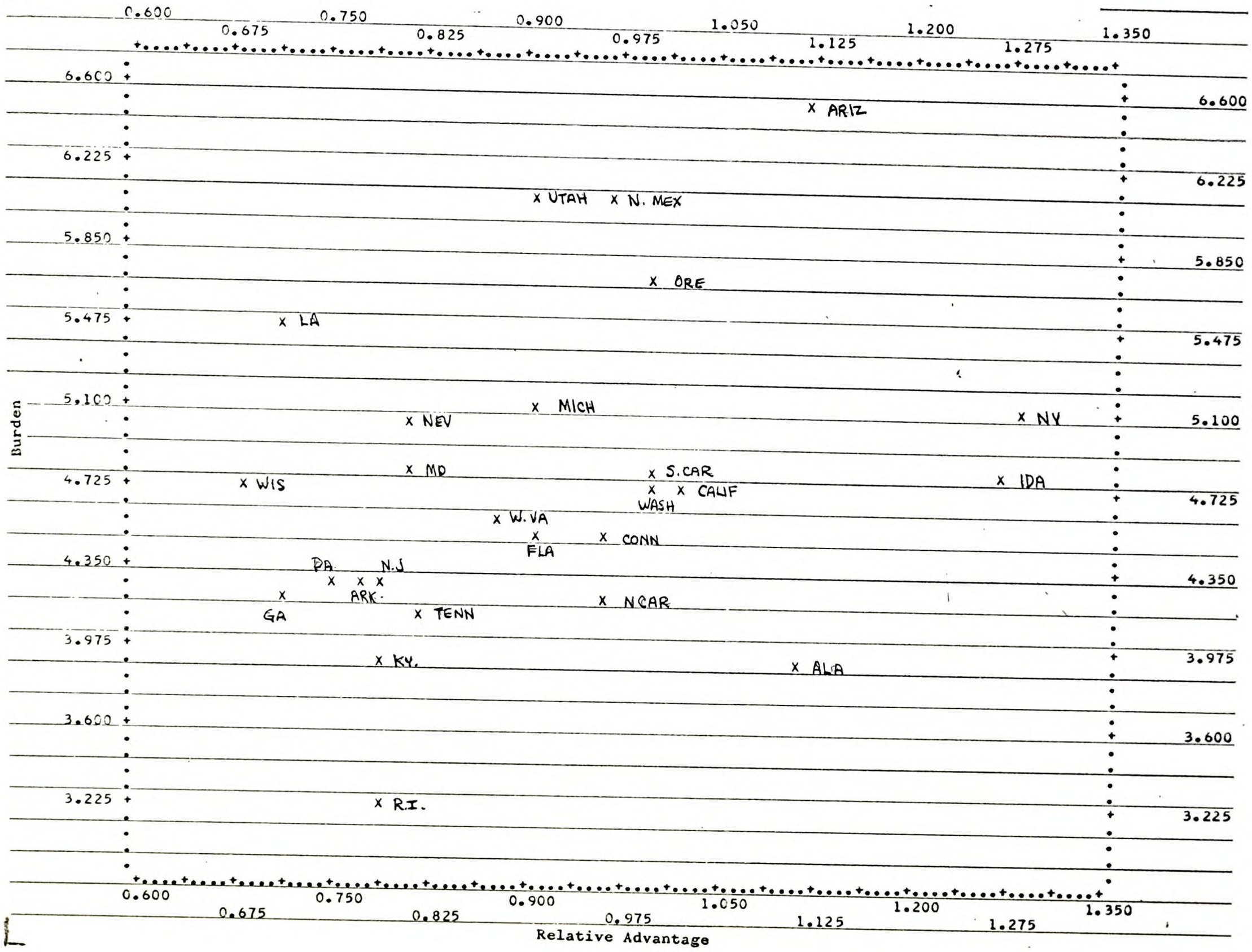


FIGURE V - 5

Change in Personal Income and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

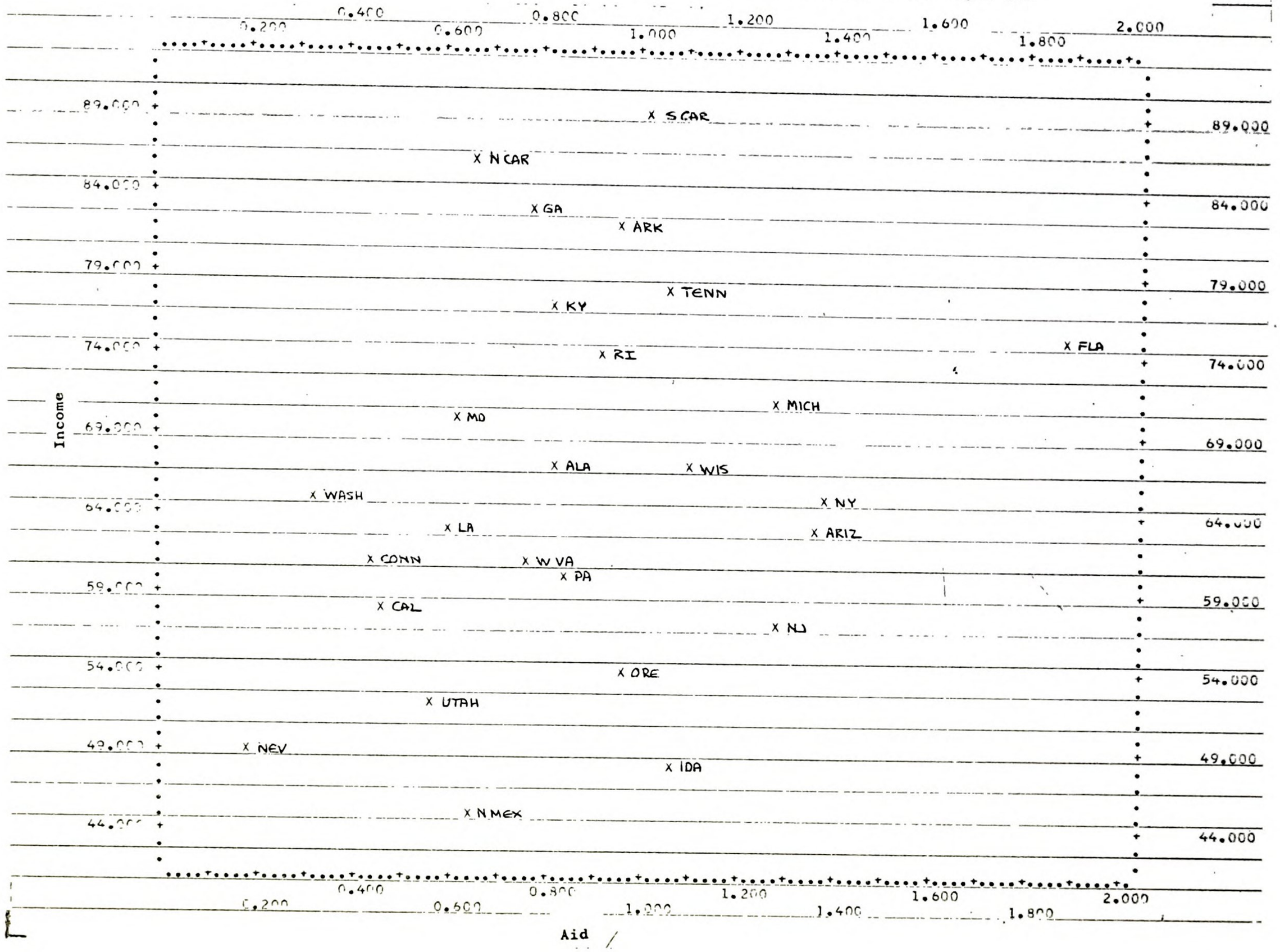


FIGURE V - 6

Change in Income and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage

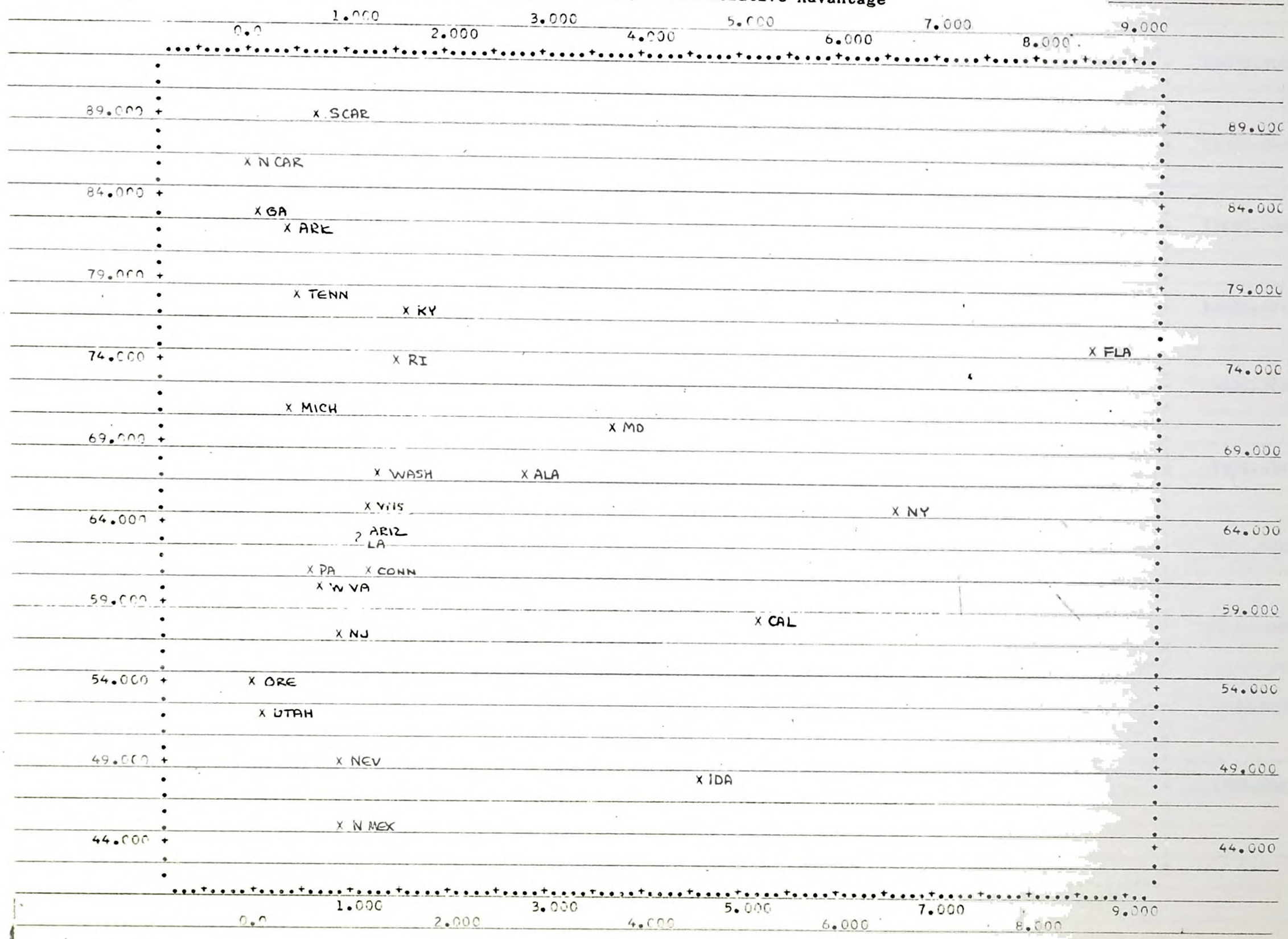


FIGURE V - 7

1966 Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

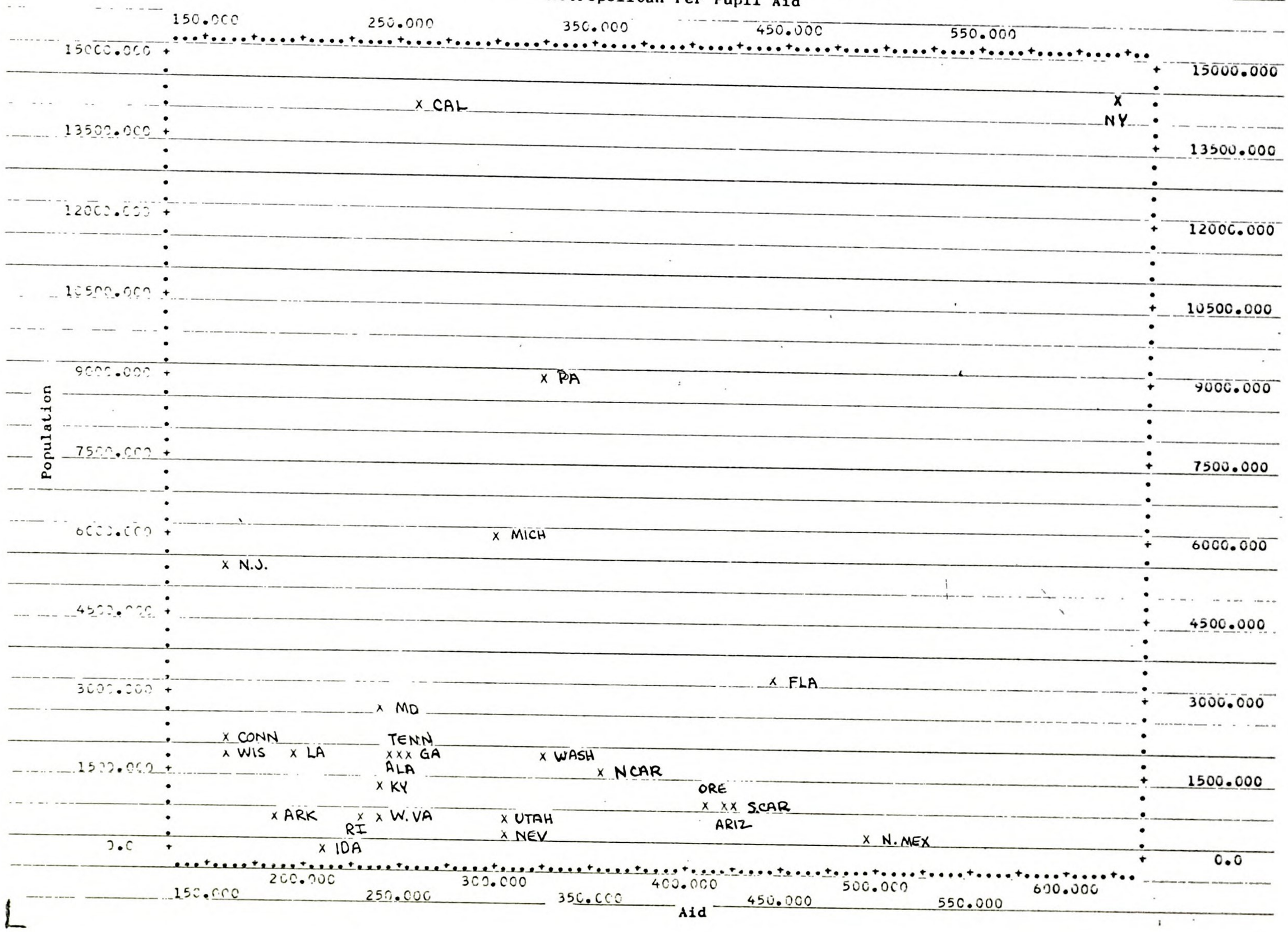


FIGURE V - 8

1966 Metropolitan Population (percent) and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

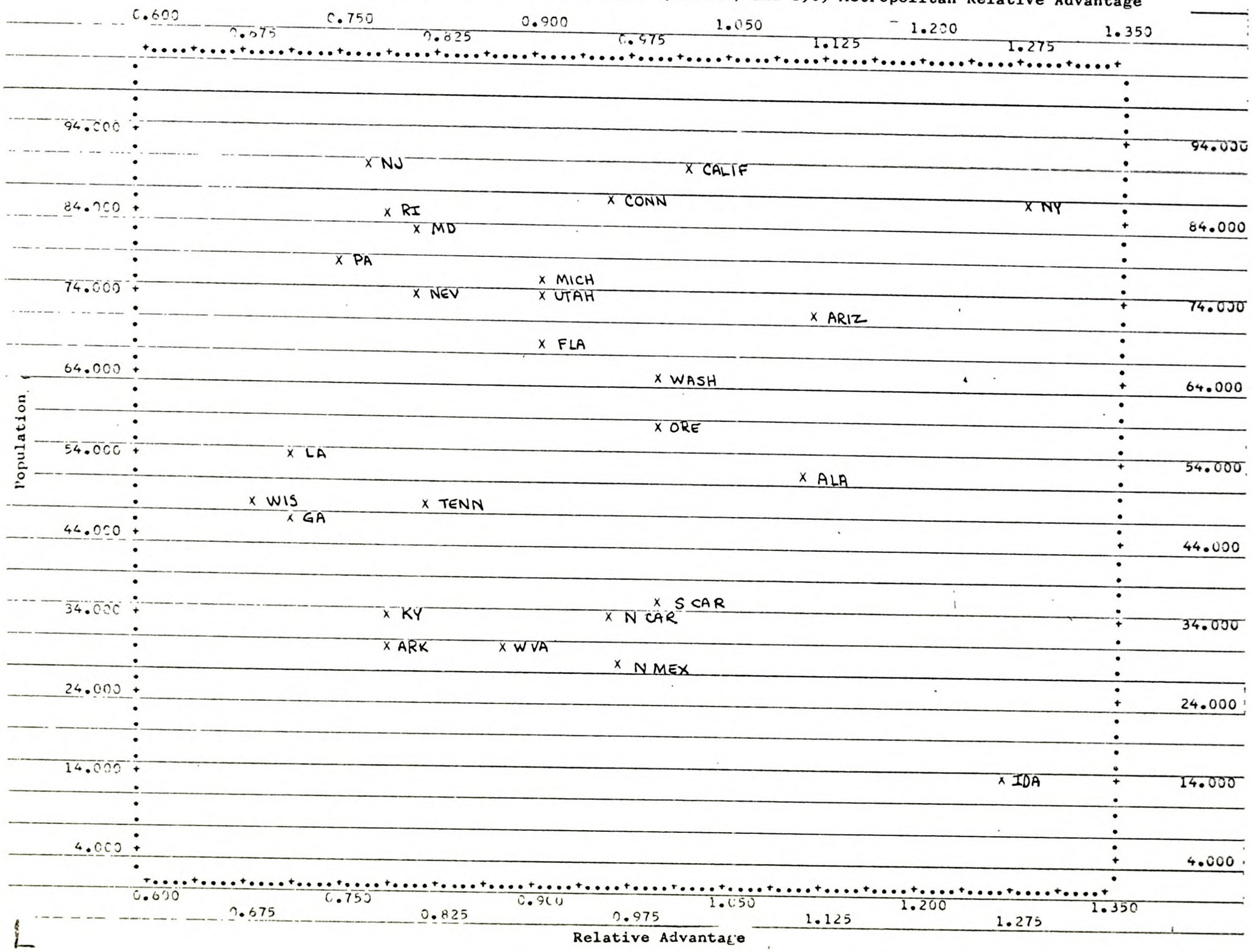


FIGURE V - 9

1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands) and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

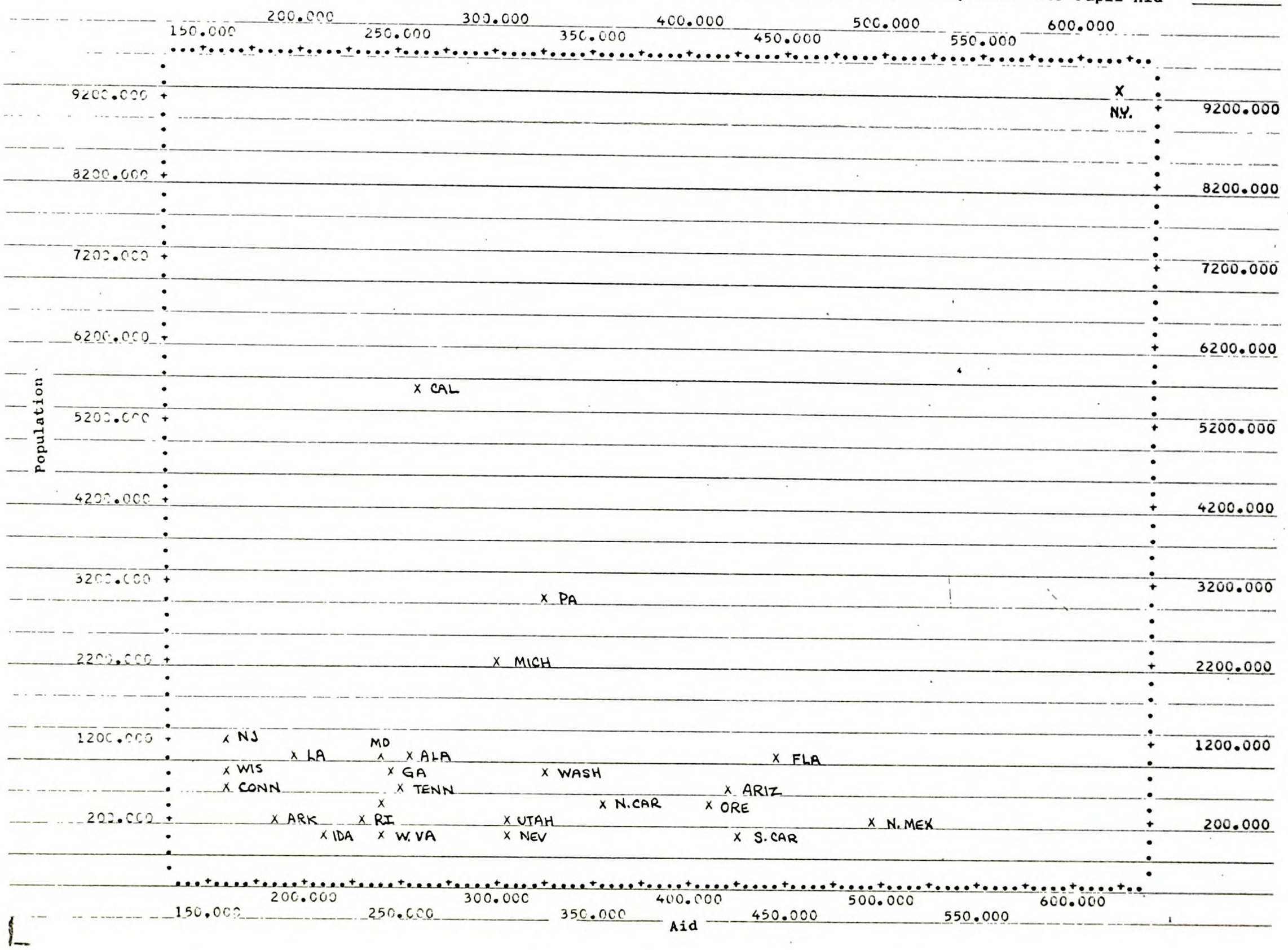


FIGURE V - 10

1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands)
and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

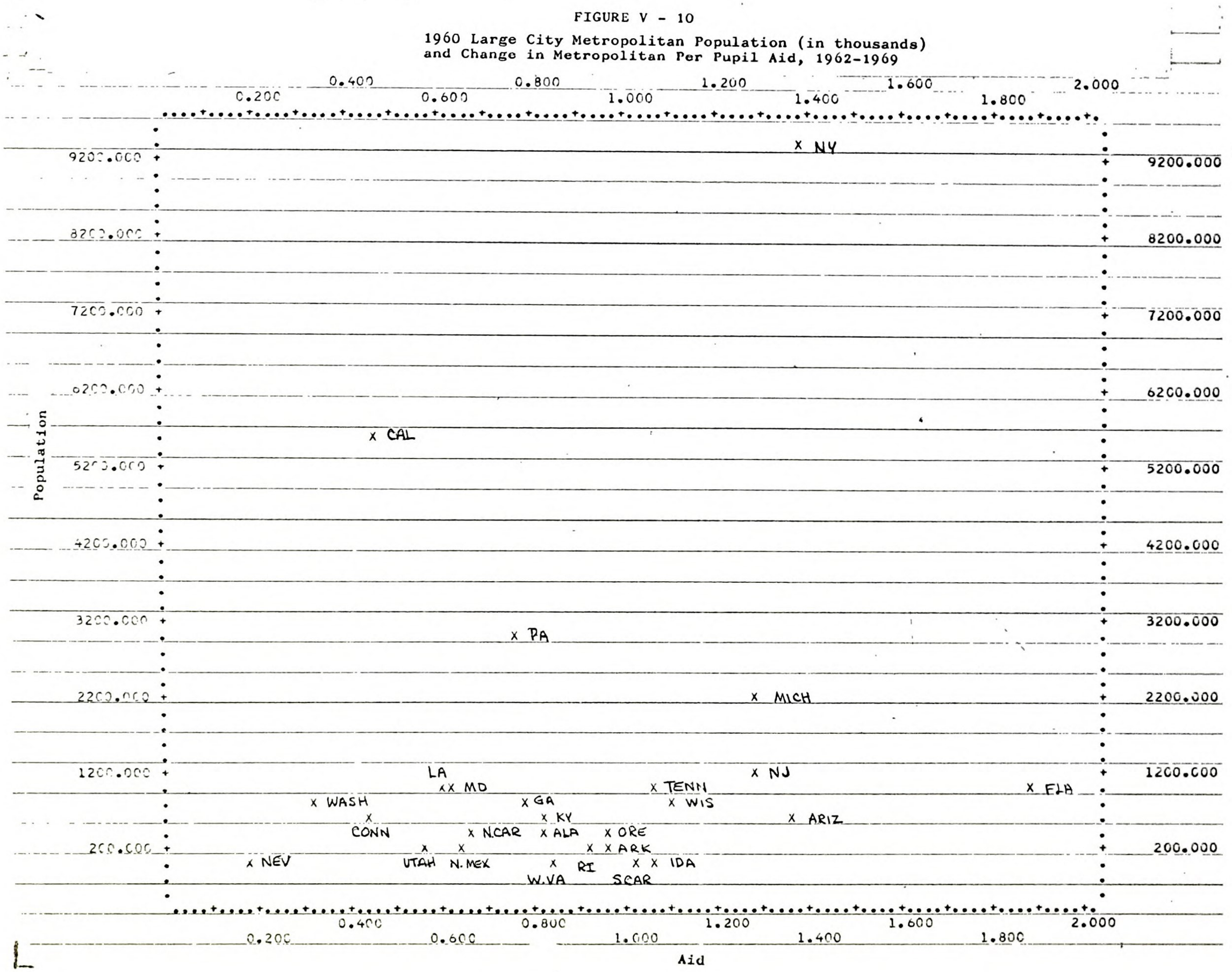


FIGURE V - 11

1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (in thousands)
and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969

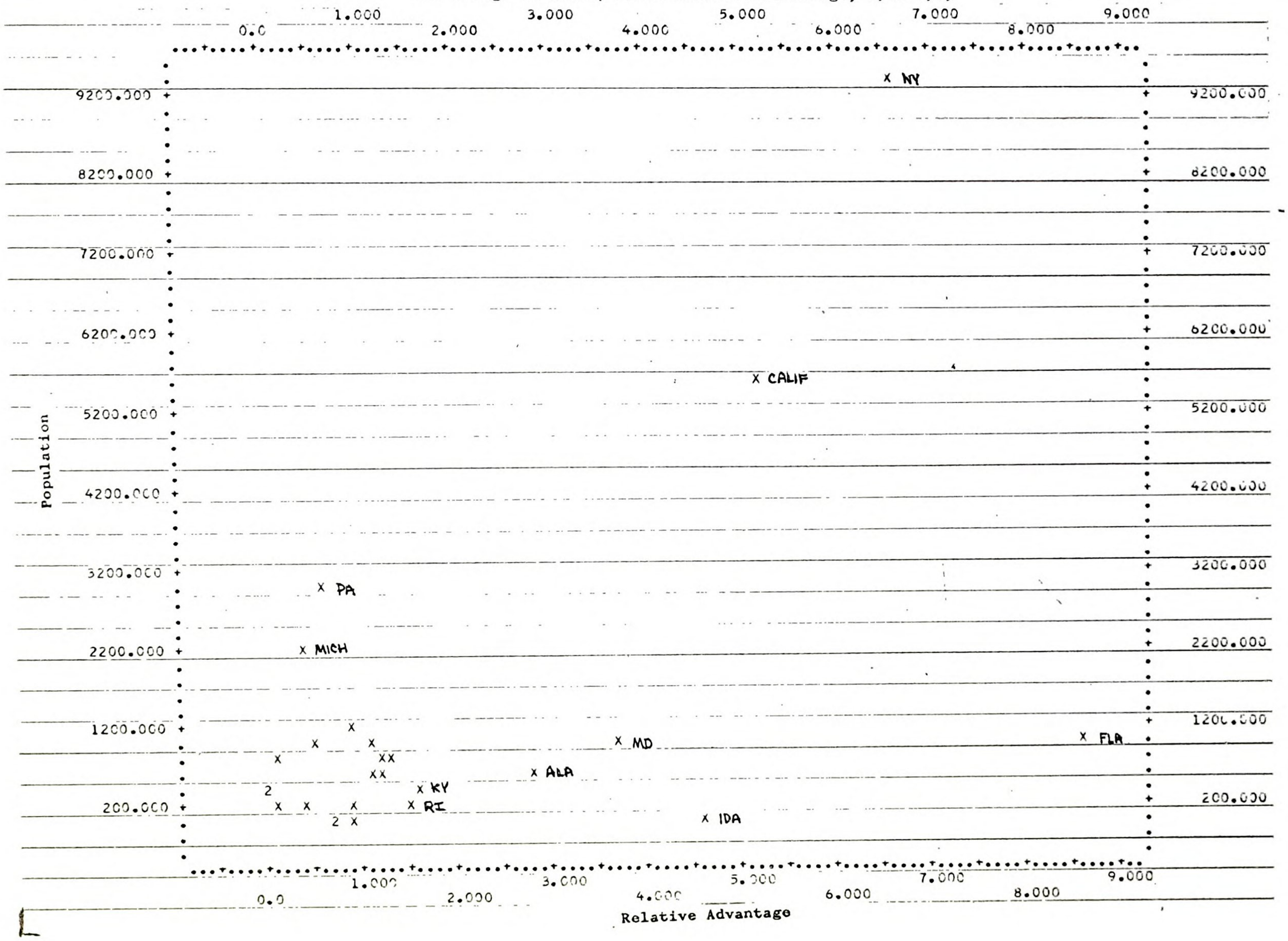


FIGURE V - 12

1960 Large City Metropolitan Population (percent)
and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

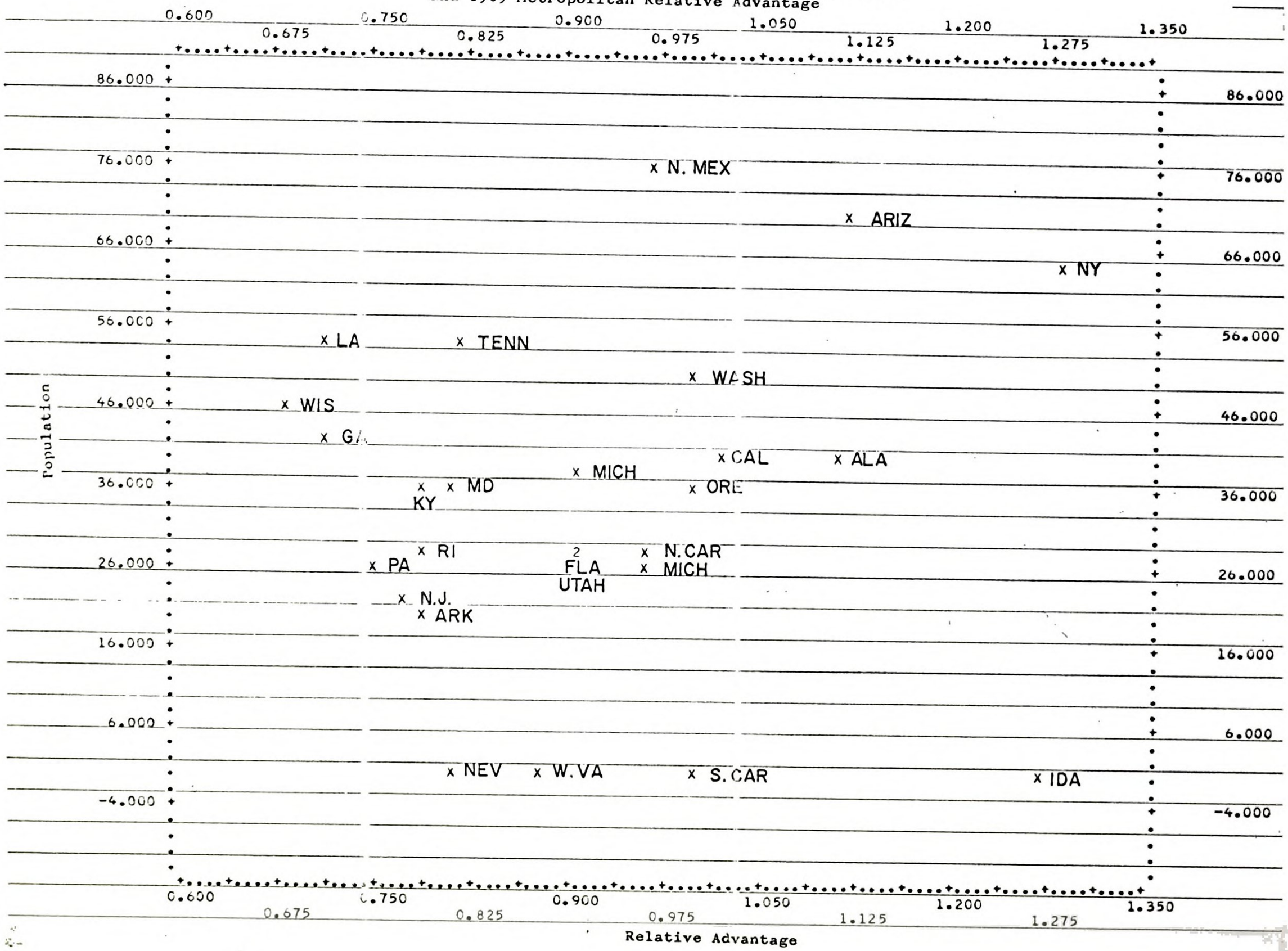


FIGURE V - 13

Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1969
and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

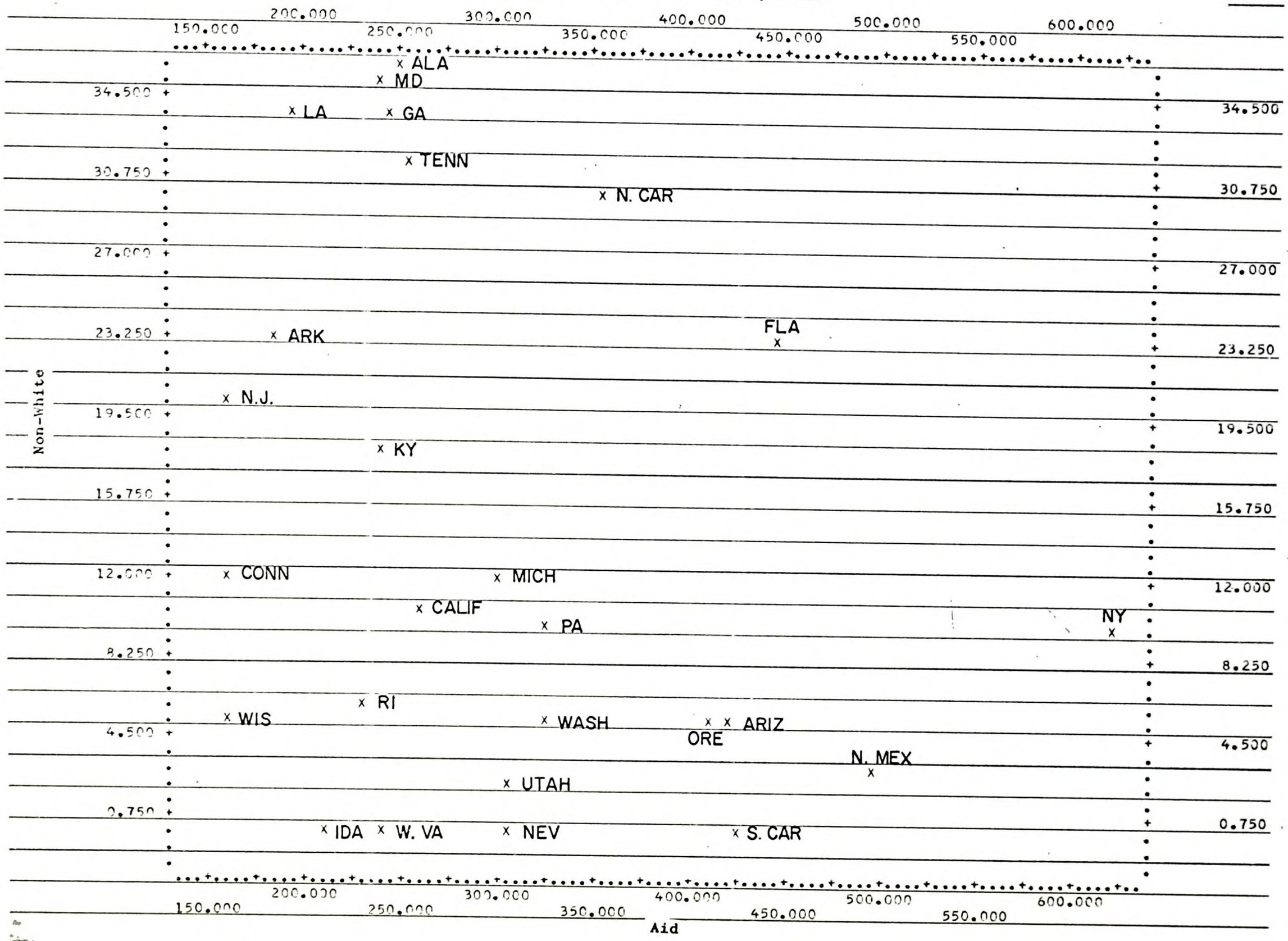


FIGURE V - 14

Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1960 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

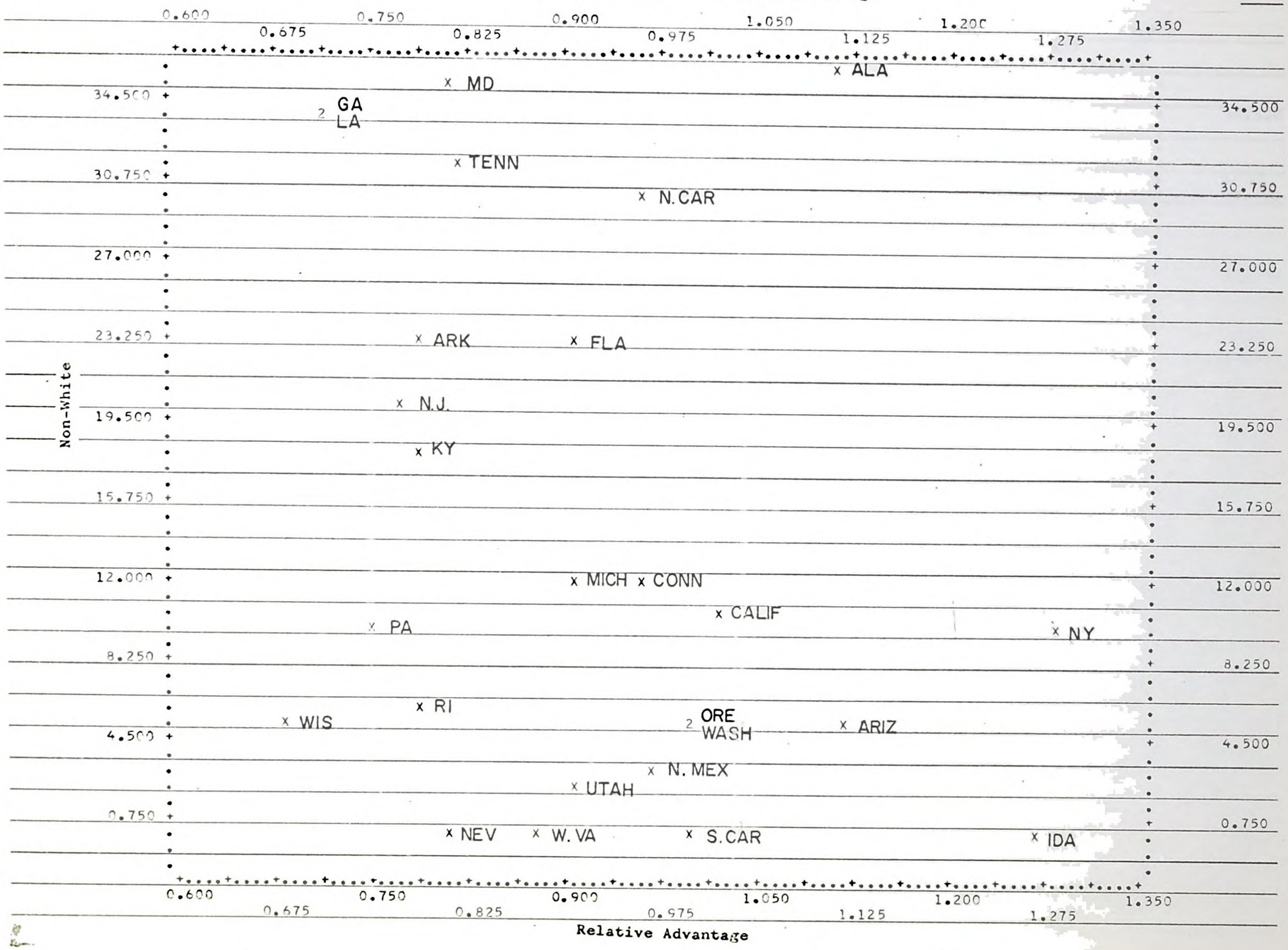


FIGURE V - 15

Percent Non-Whites in Large Metropolitan Cities in 1960
and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

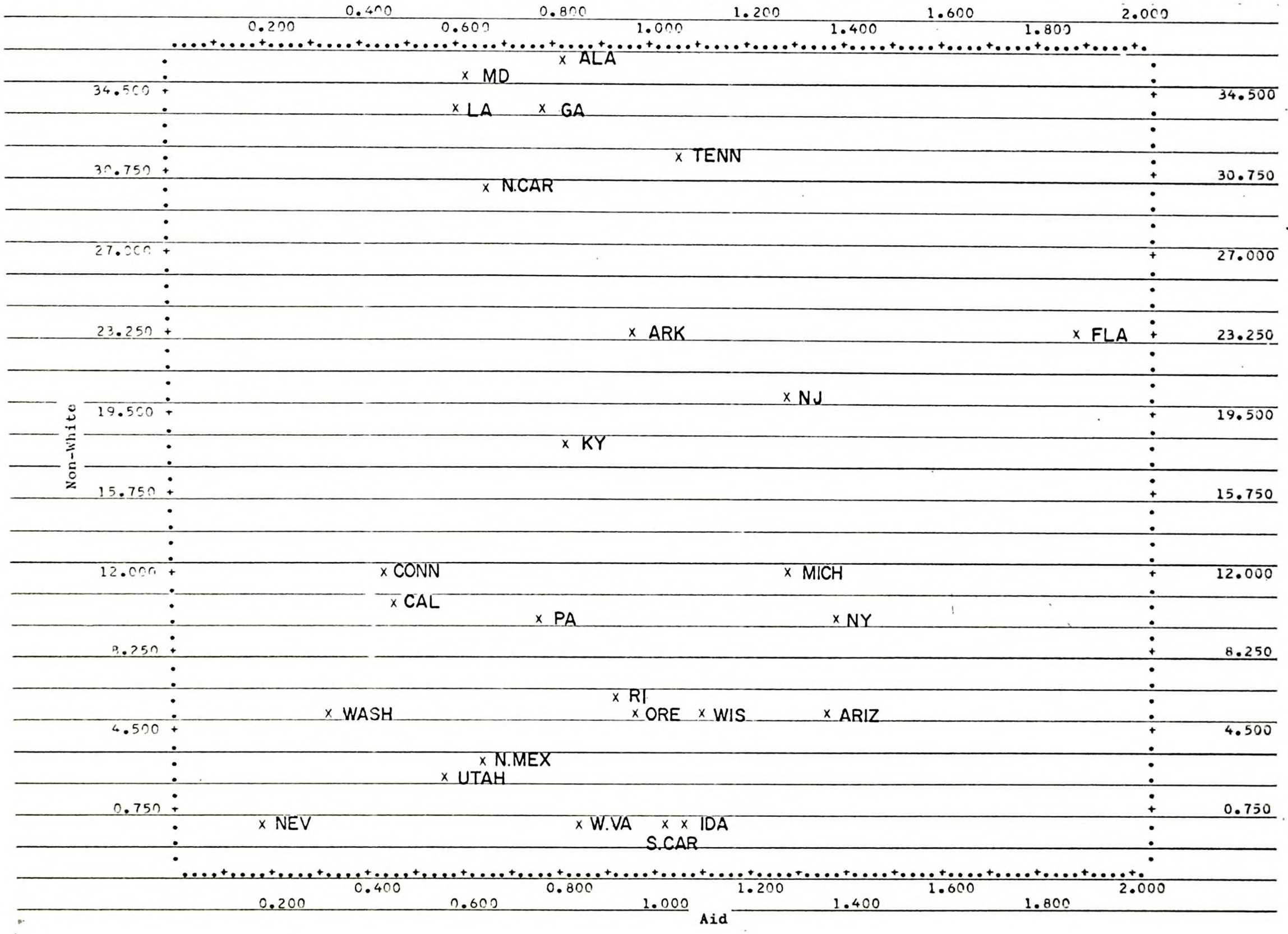


FIGURE V - 16

Change in Population and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

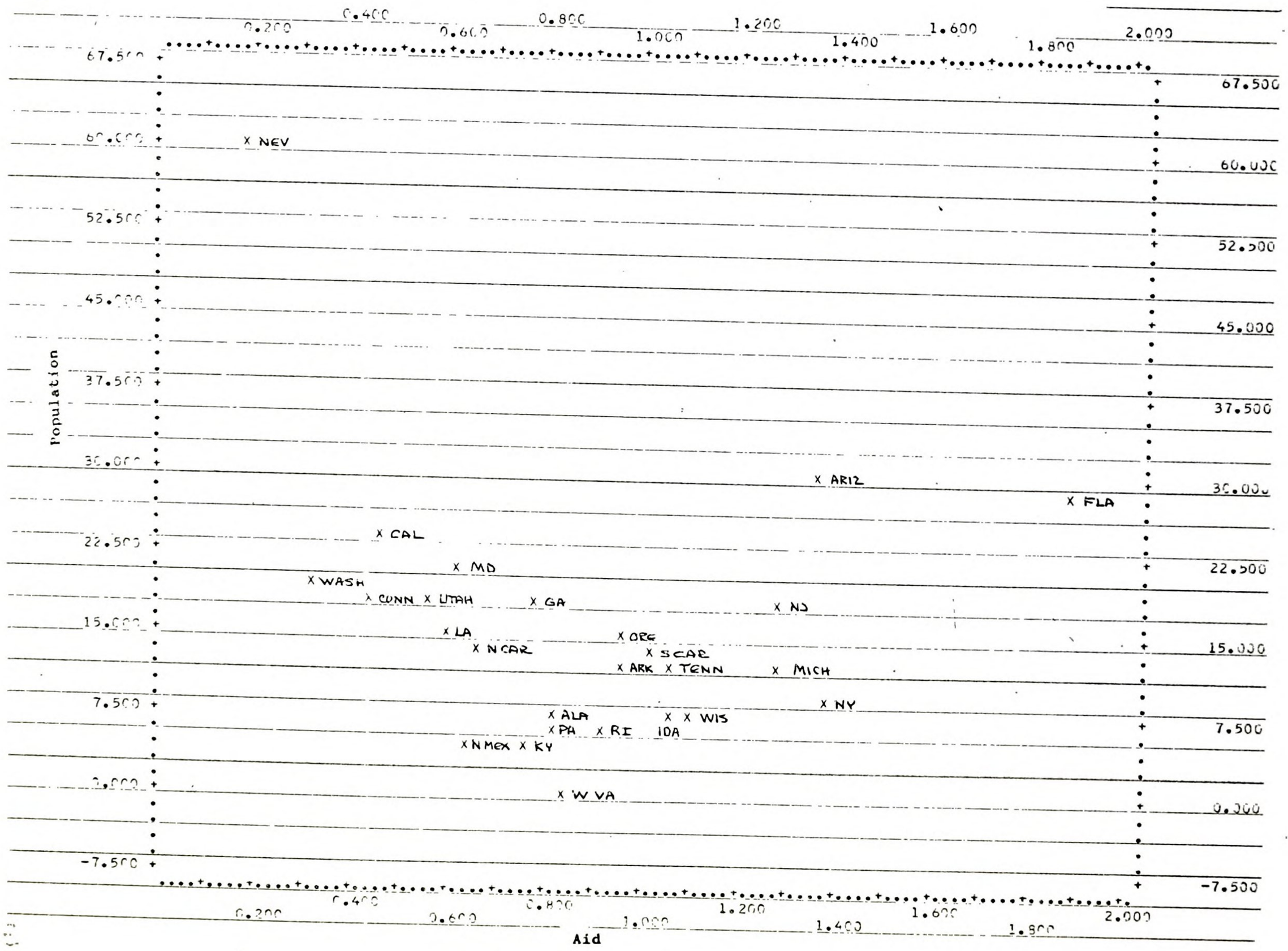


FIGURE V - 17

Change in Population and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage

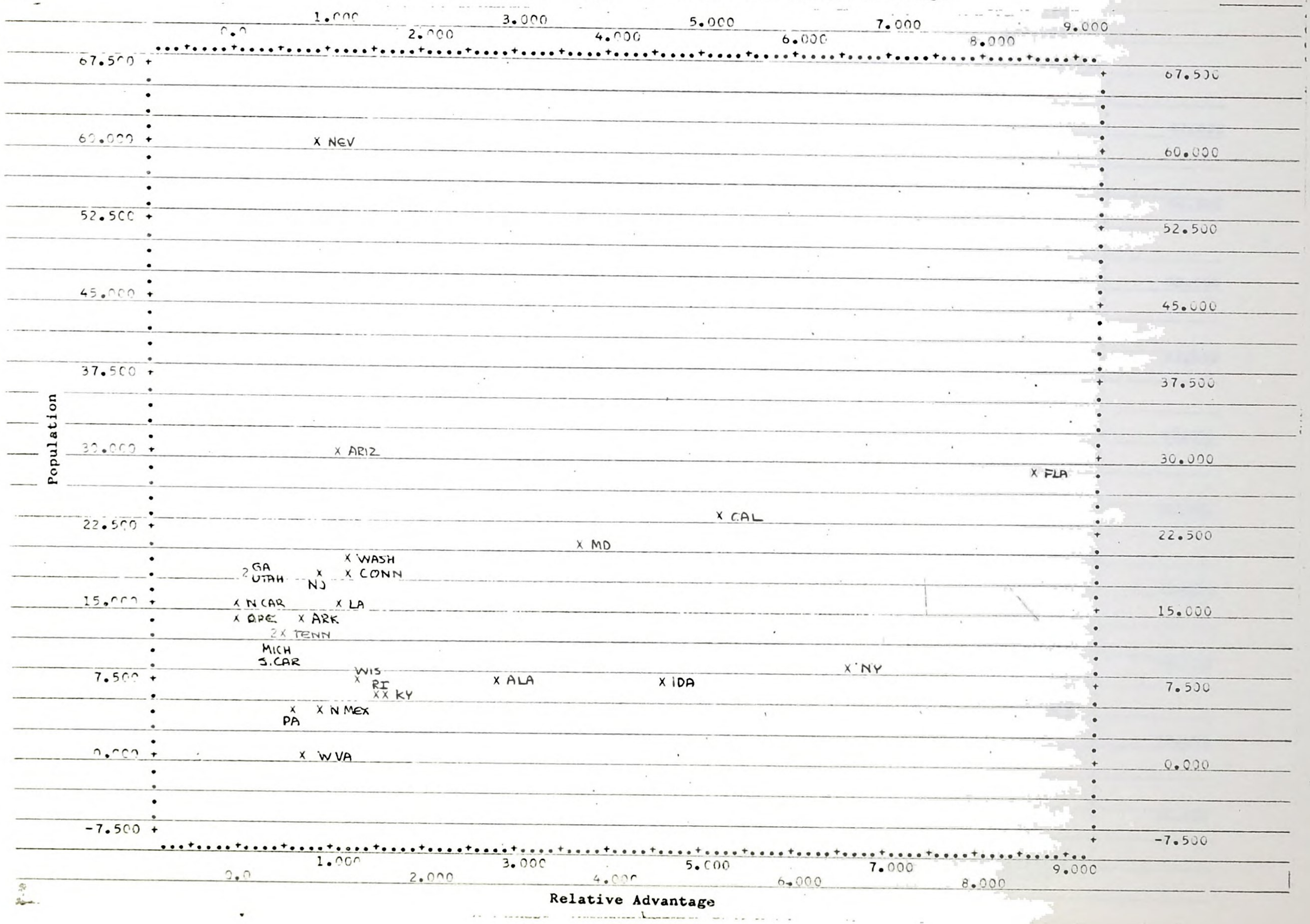


FIGURE V - 18

Percent Students in Public Schools in 1967 and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

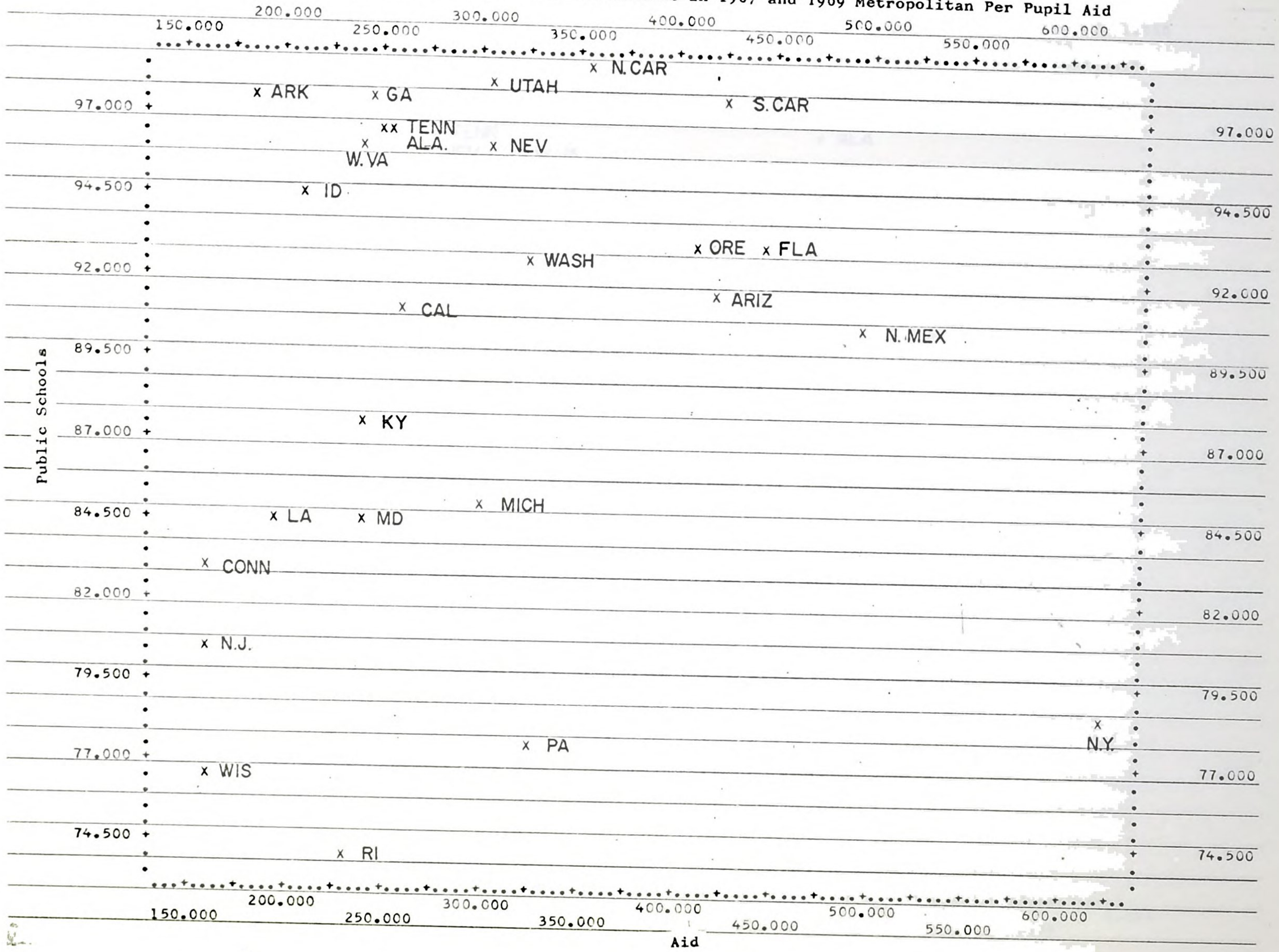


FIGURE V - 19

Percent Students in Public Schools in 1967 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

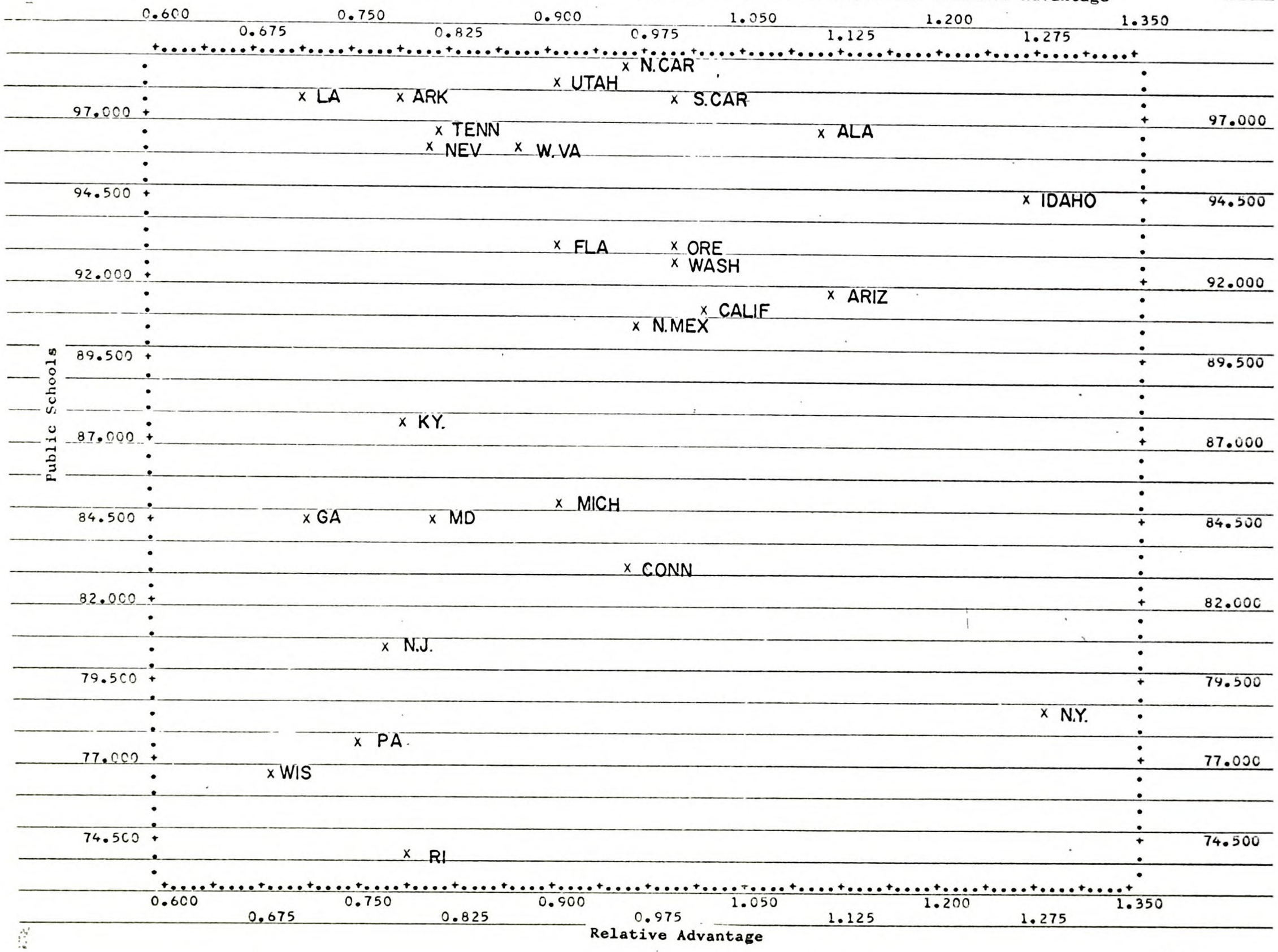


FIGURE V - 20

Ranney Index of Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

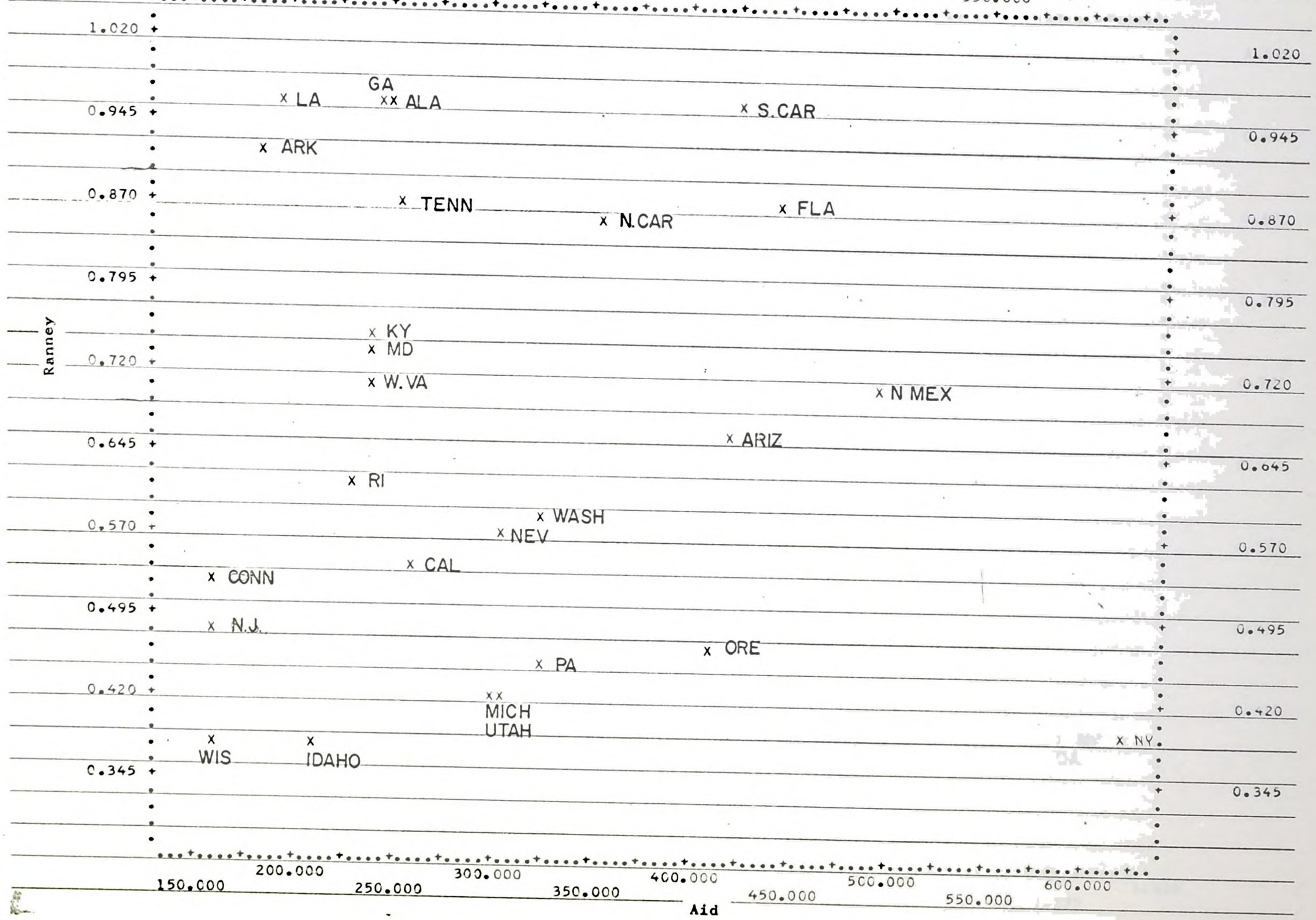


FIGURE V - 21

Ranney Index of Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

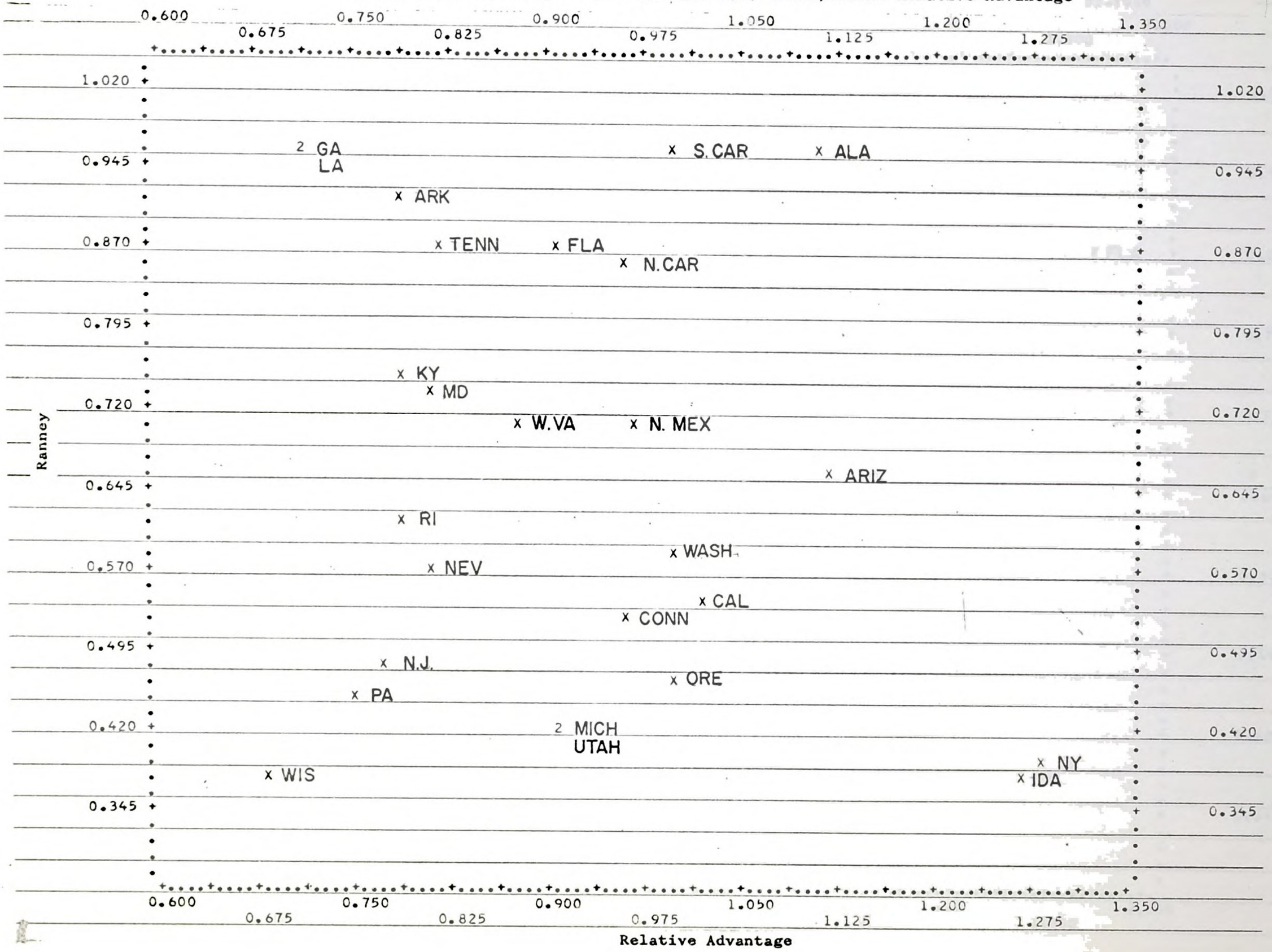


FIGURE V - 22

Ranney Index of Party Competition and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

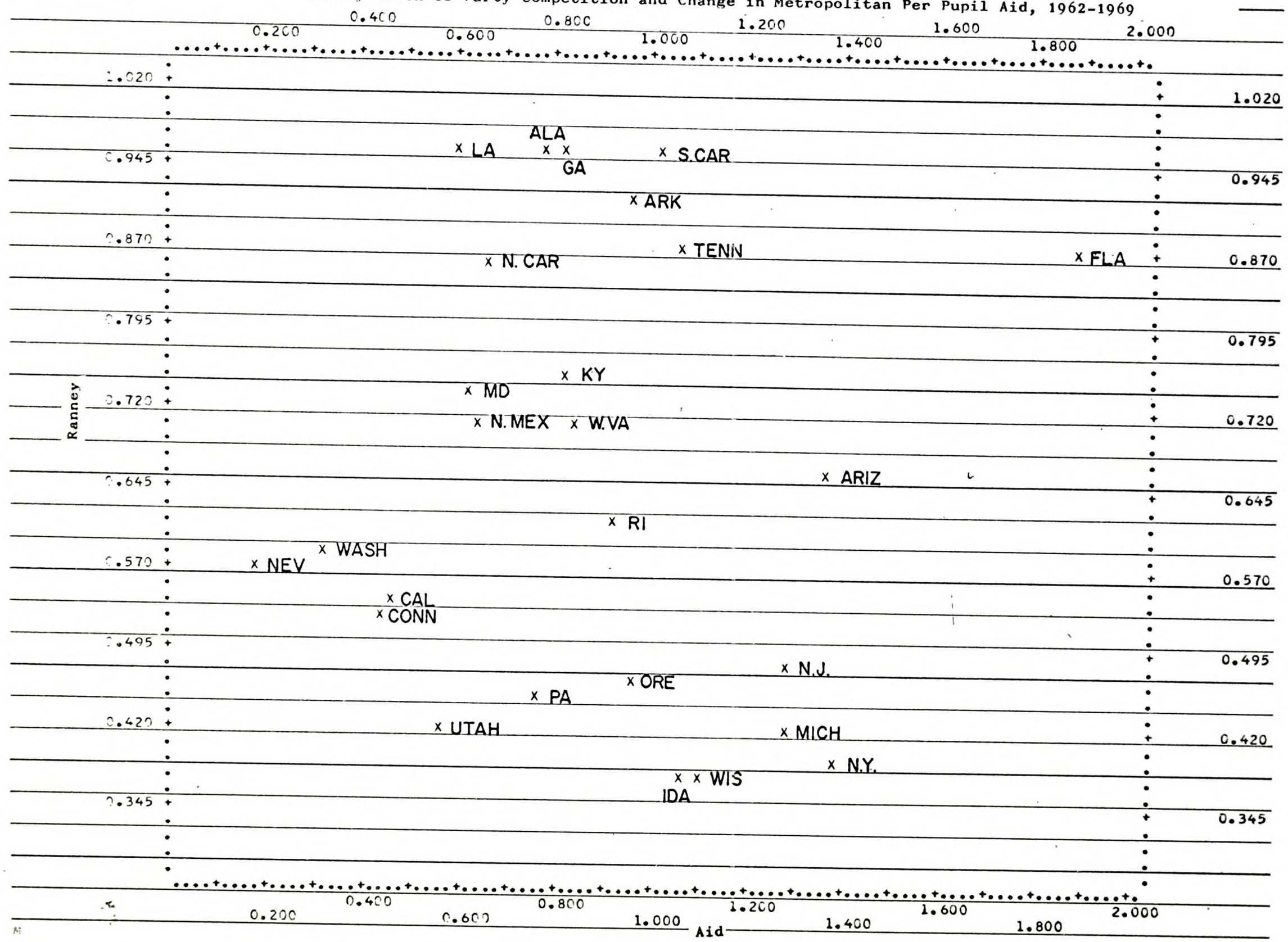


FIGURE V - 23

Ranney Index of Party Competition and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969

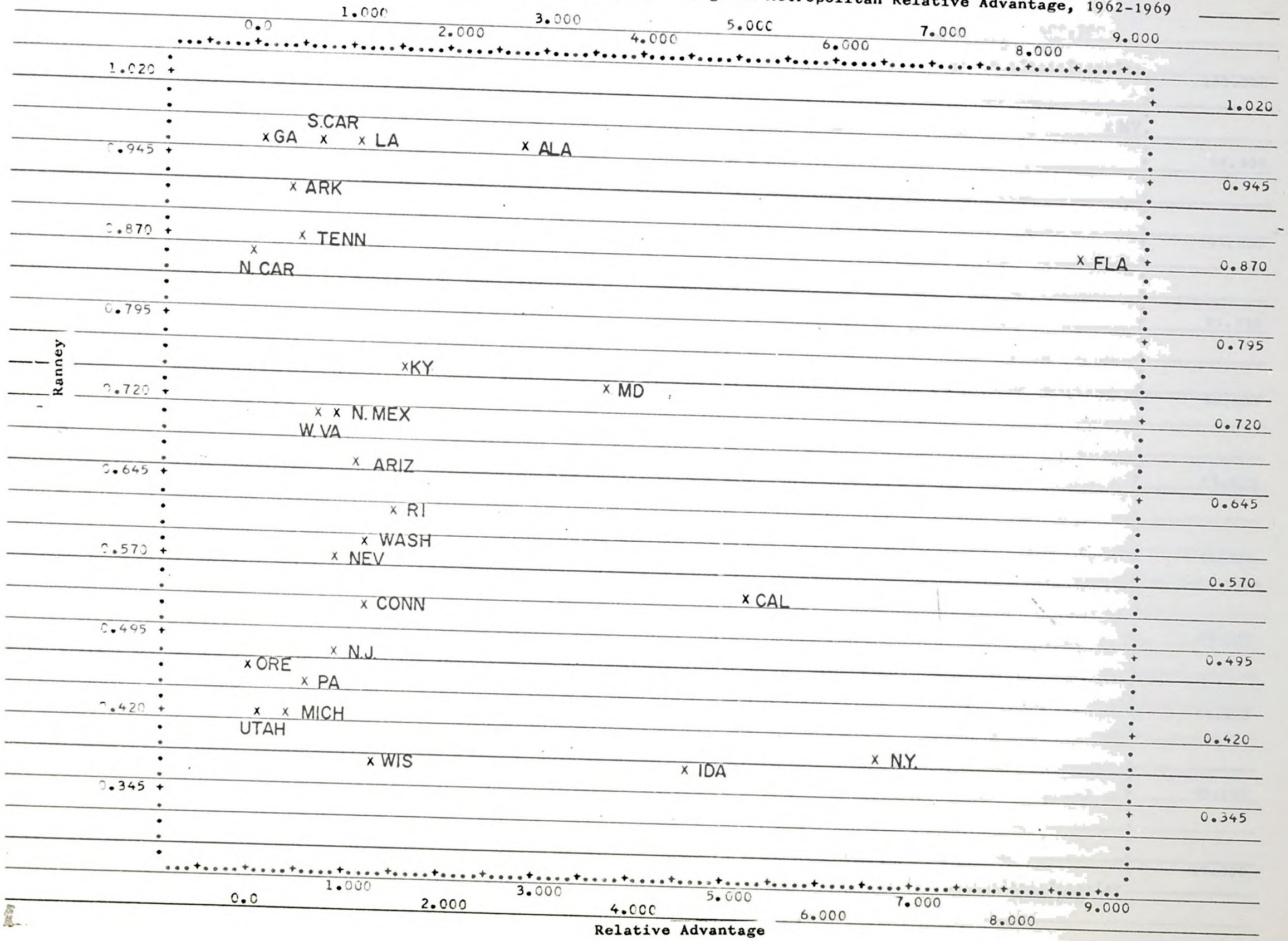


FIGURE V - 24

1967 Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

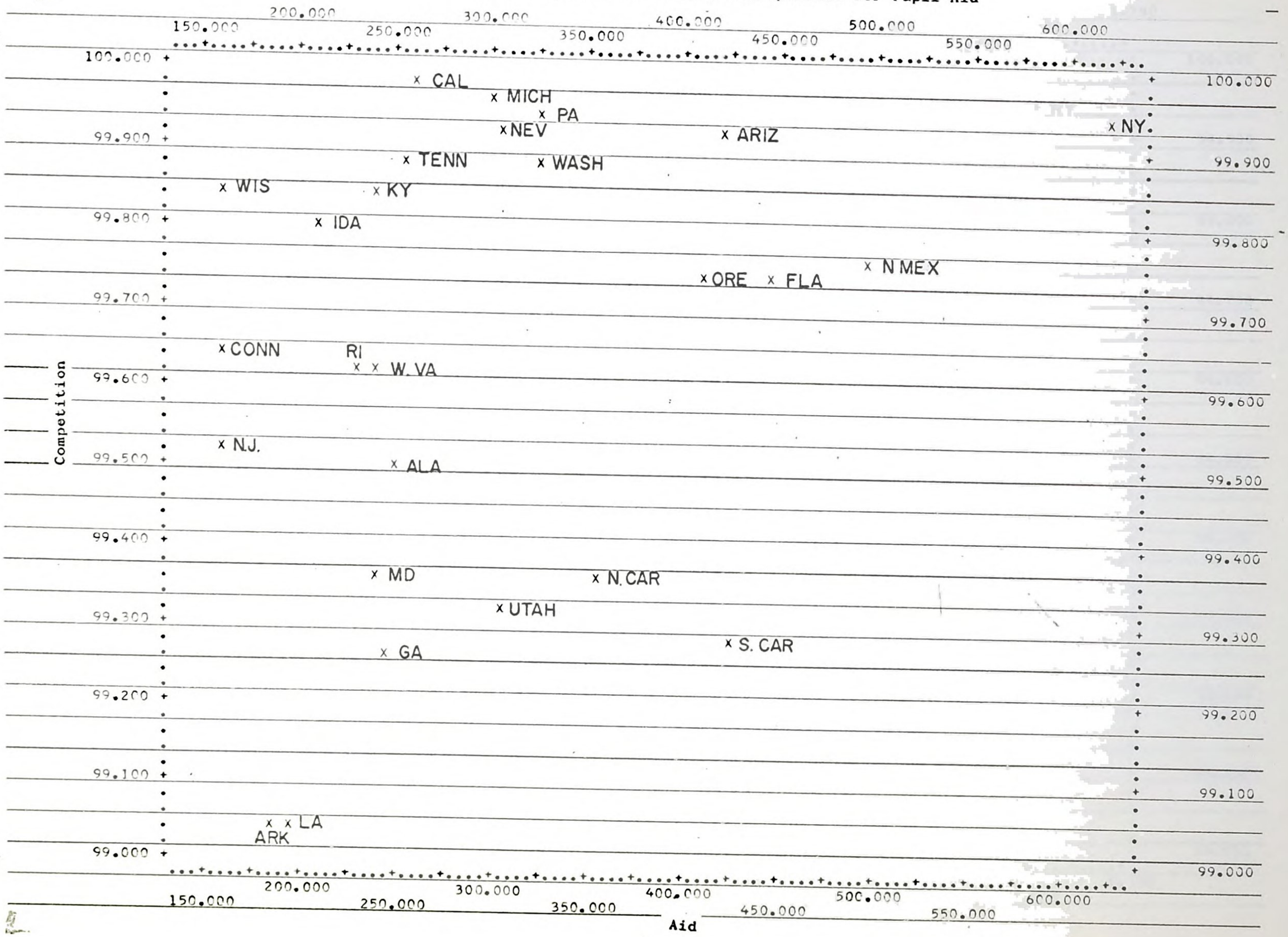


FIGURE V - 25

1967 Party Competition and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

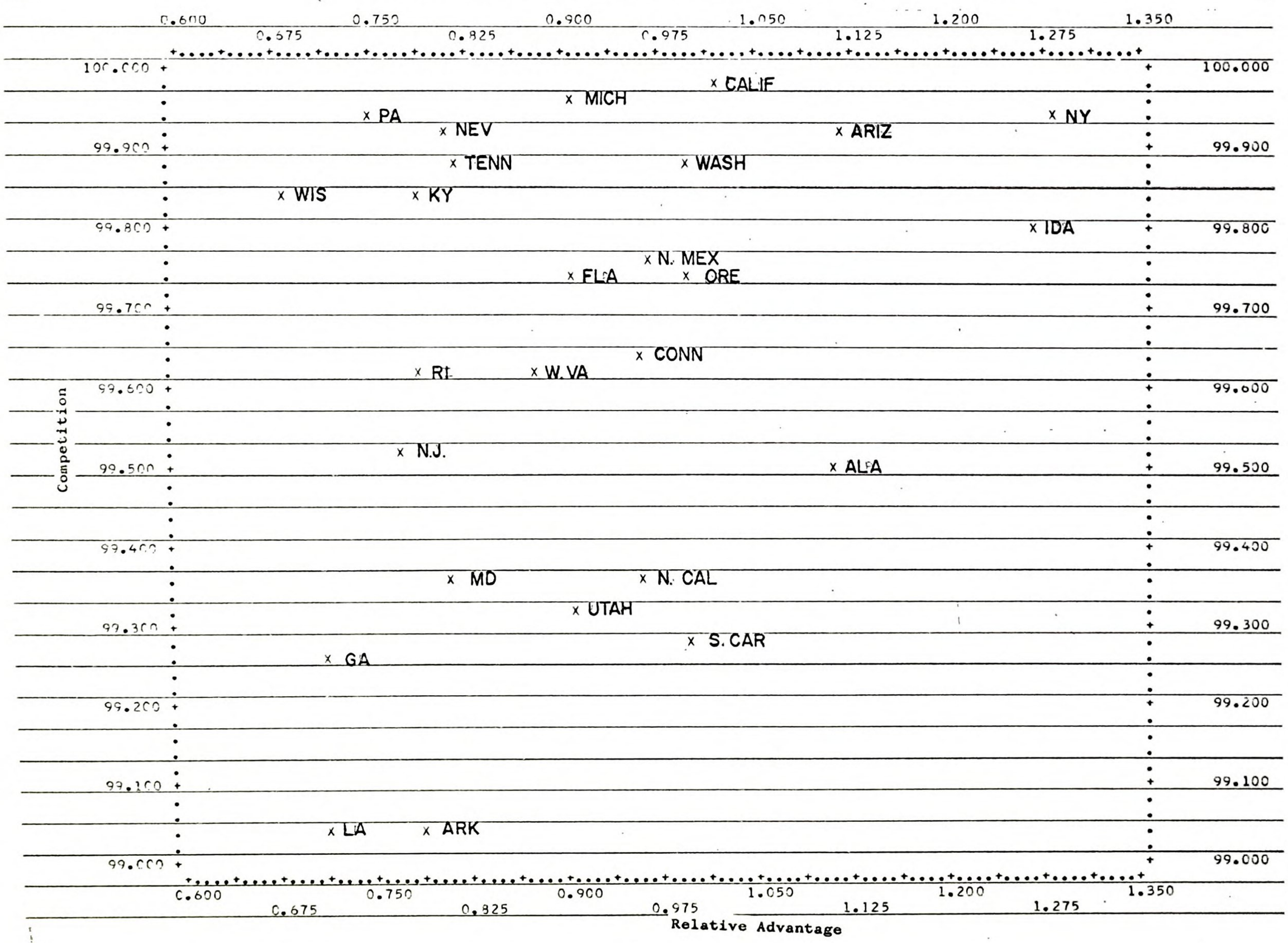


FIGURE V - 26

Milbrath Index of Participation and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

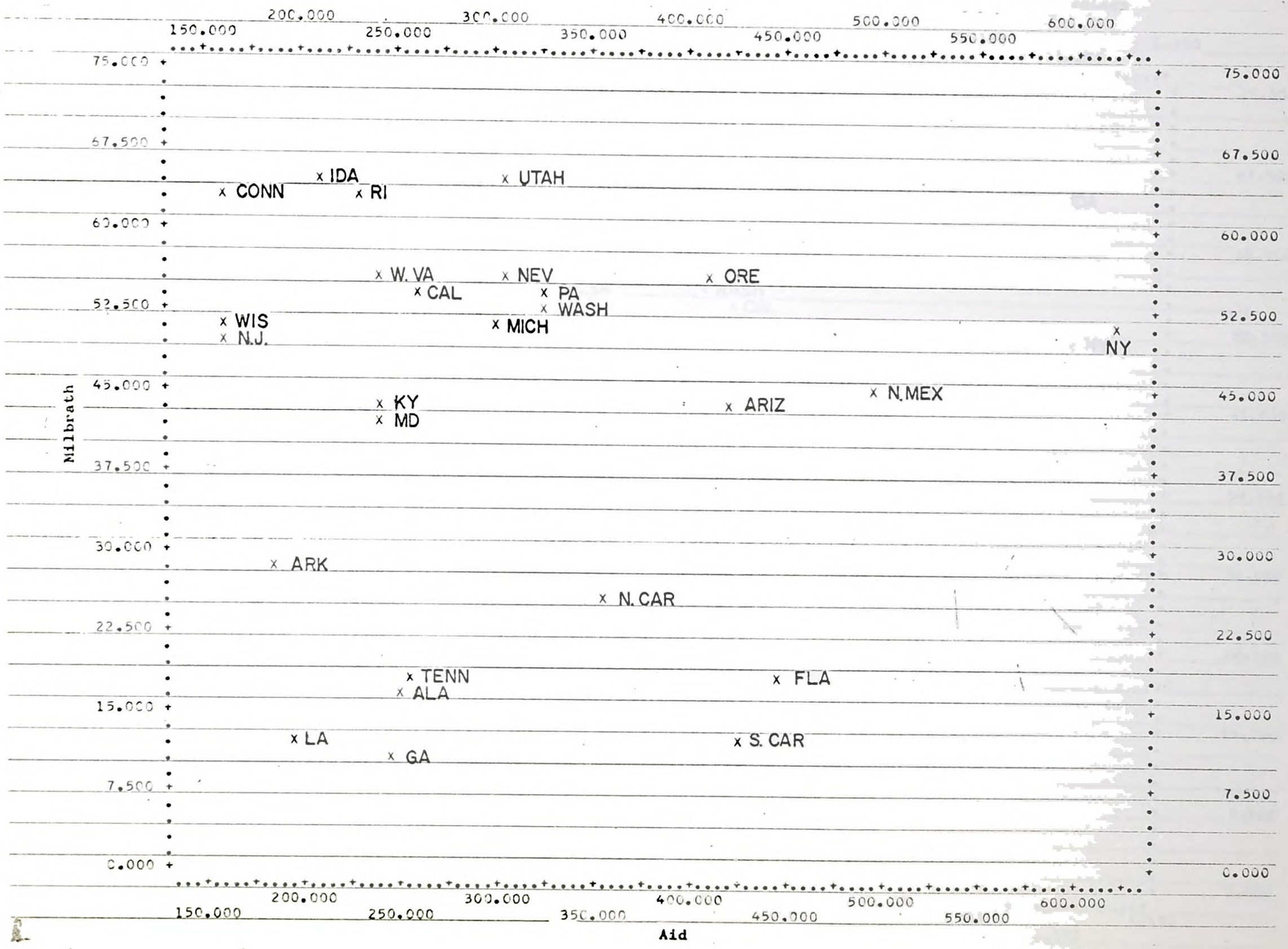


FIGURE V-27

Milbrath Index of Participation and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

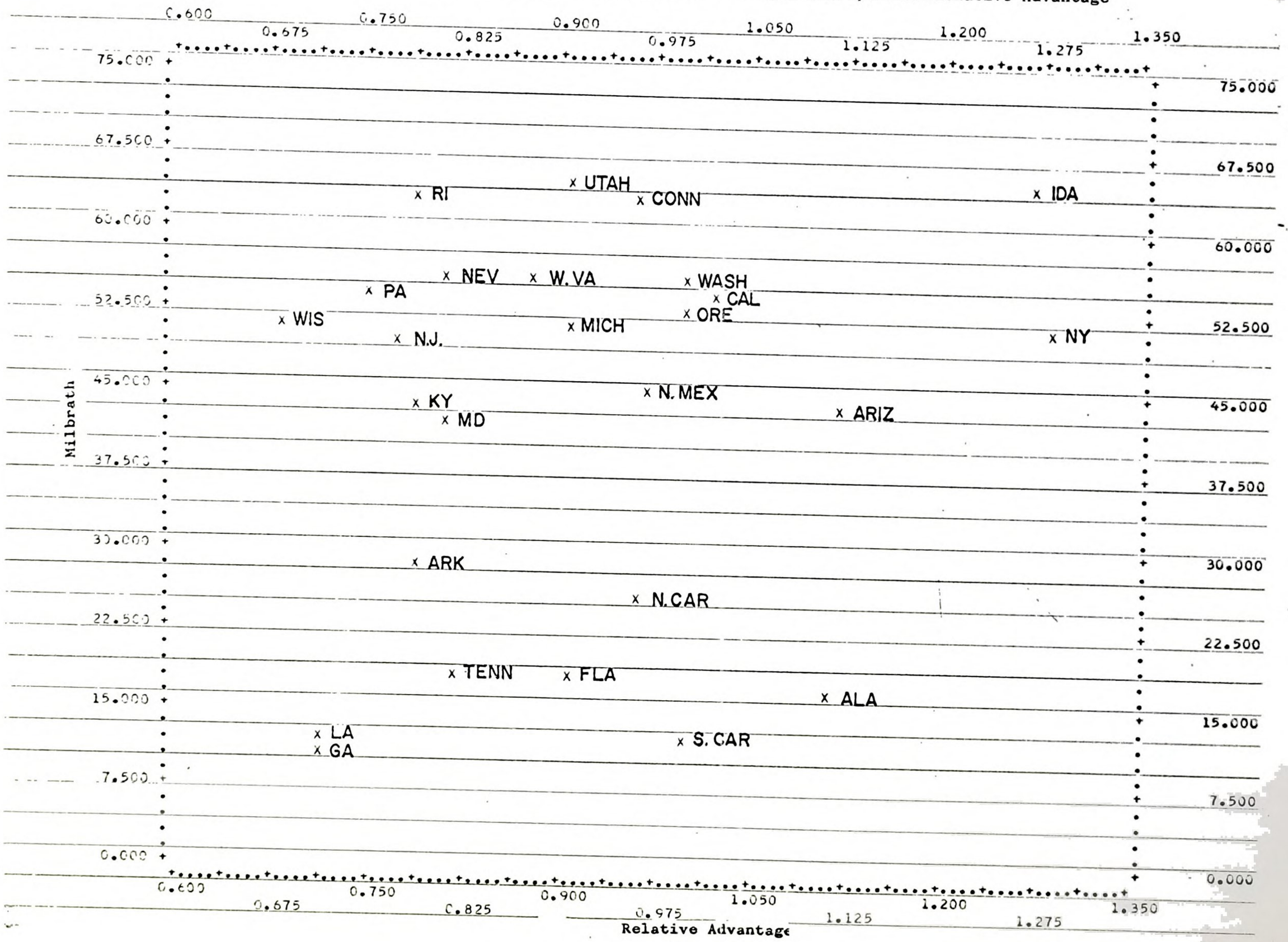


FIGURE V-28

Milbrath Index of Participation and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

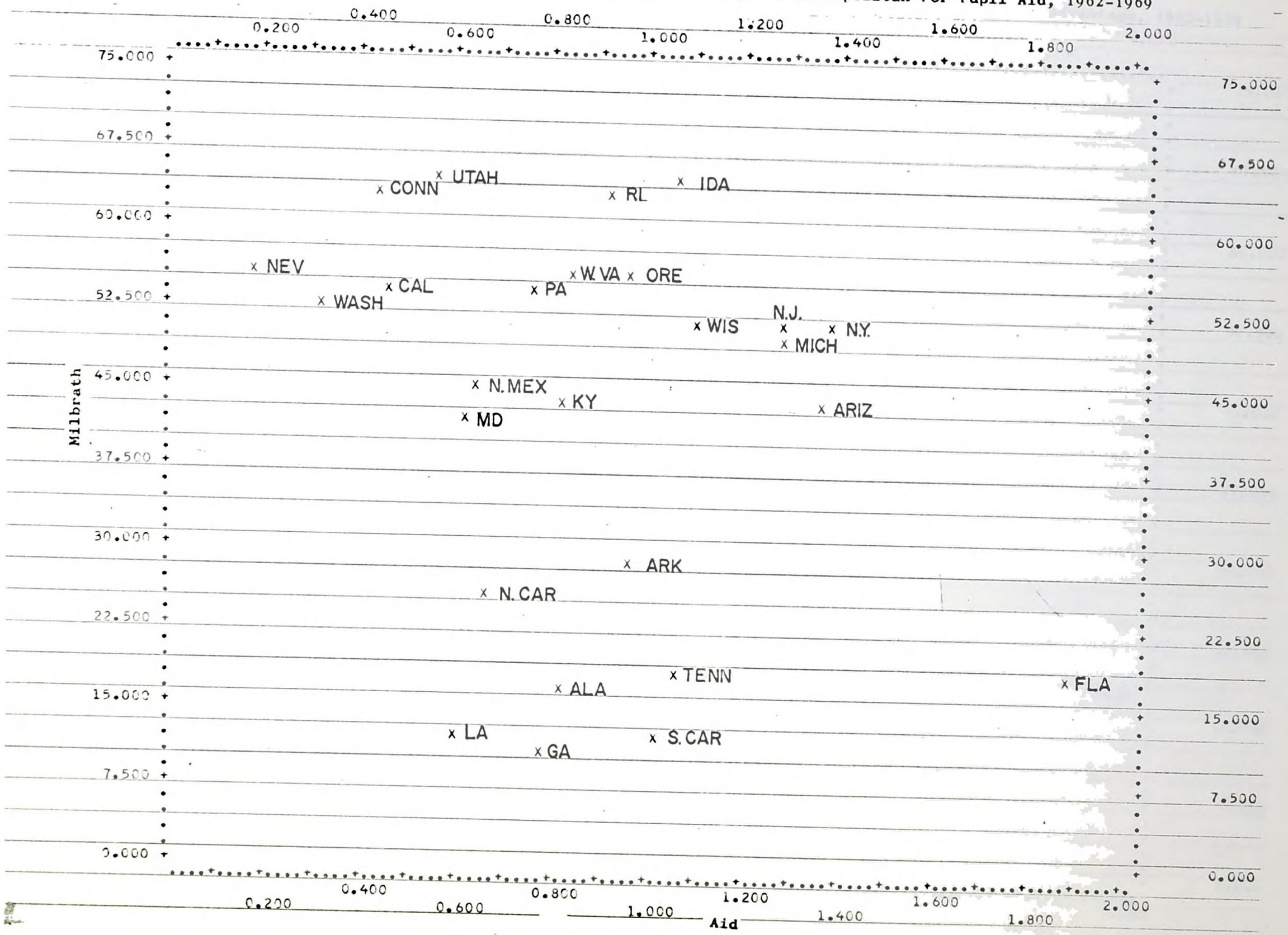


FIGURE V-29

Milbrath Index of Participation and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969

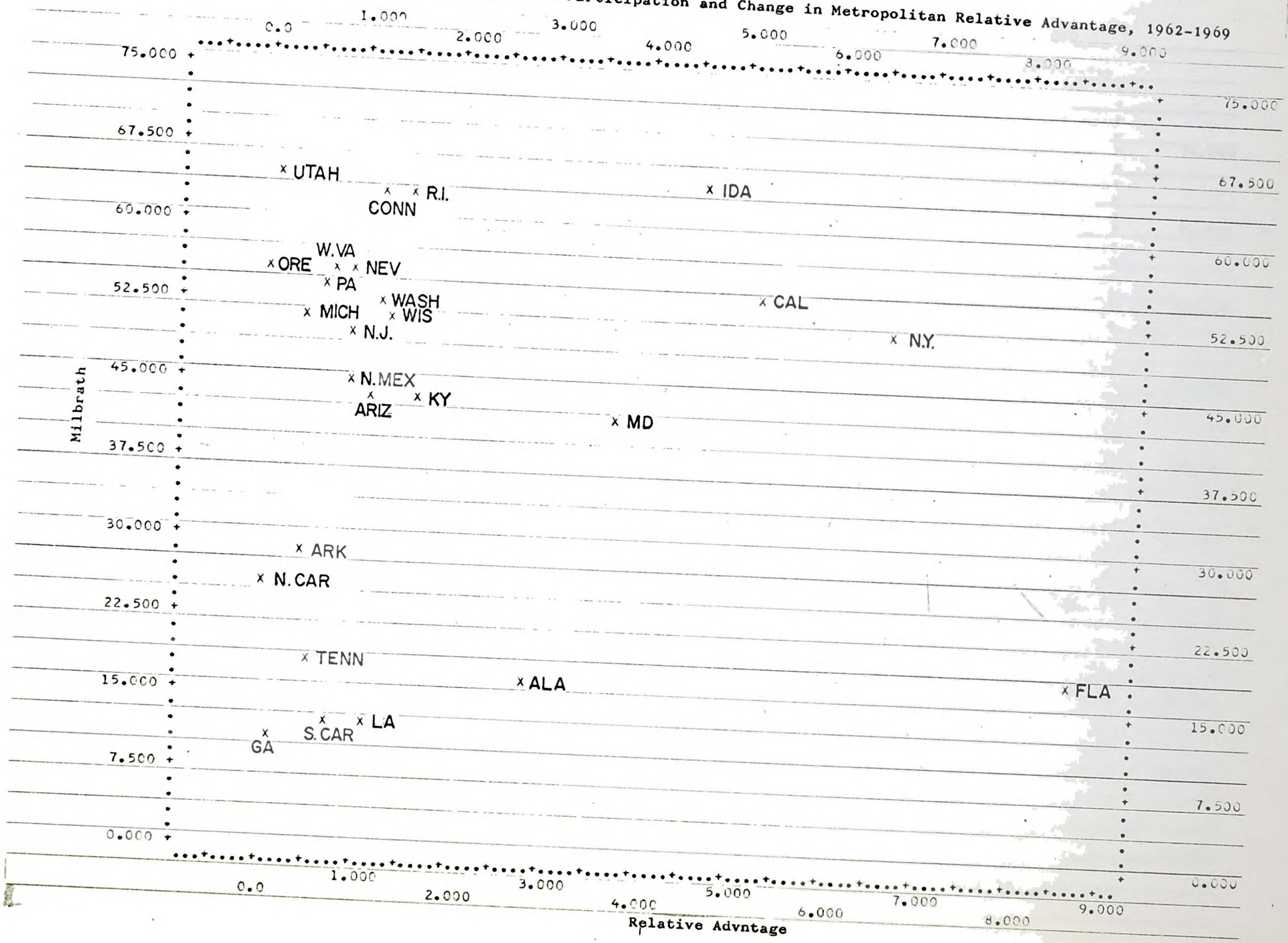


FIGURE V-30

Governor Vote Nearest 1968 and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

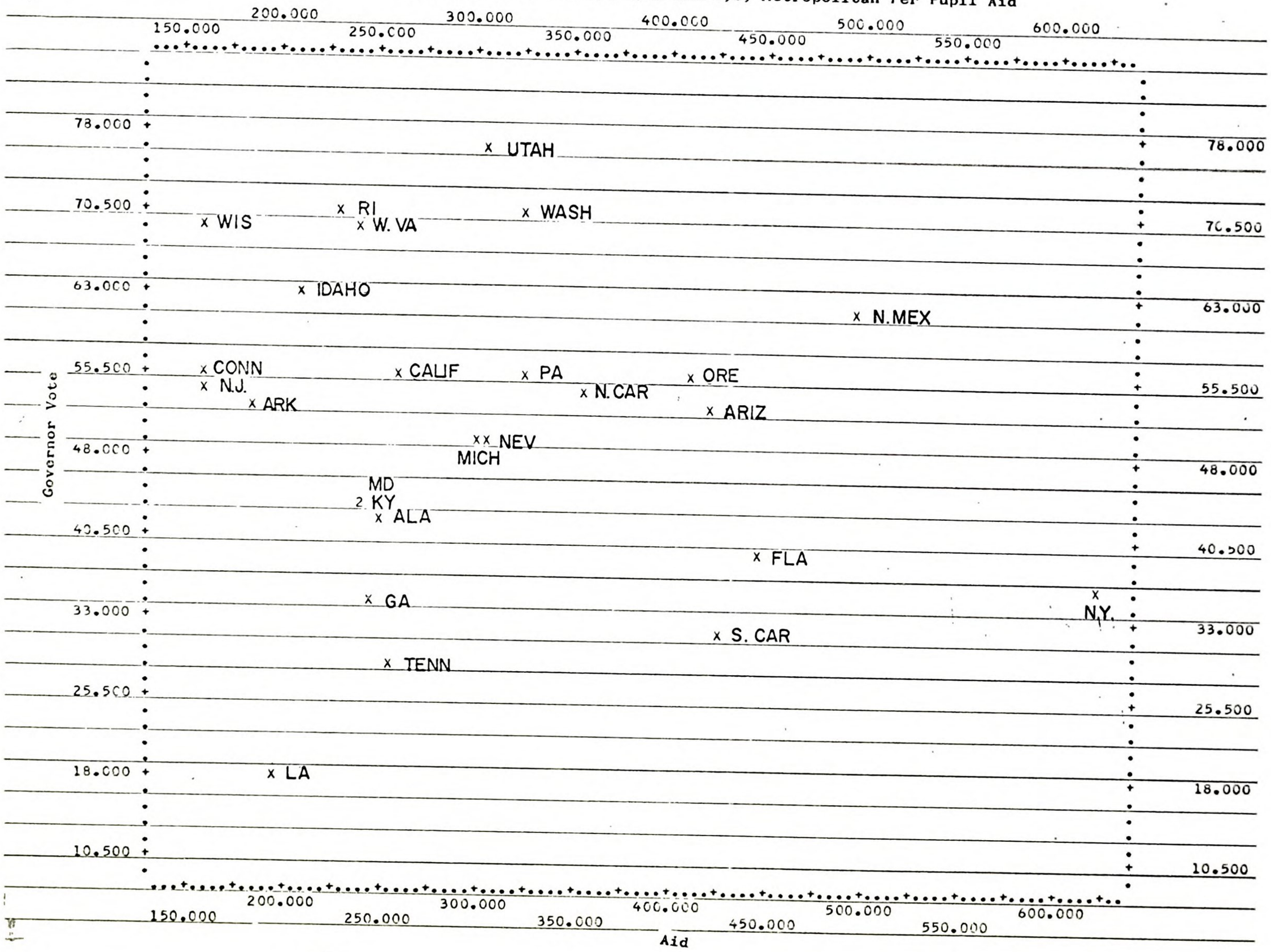


FIGURE V-31

Governor Vote Nearest 1968 and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage

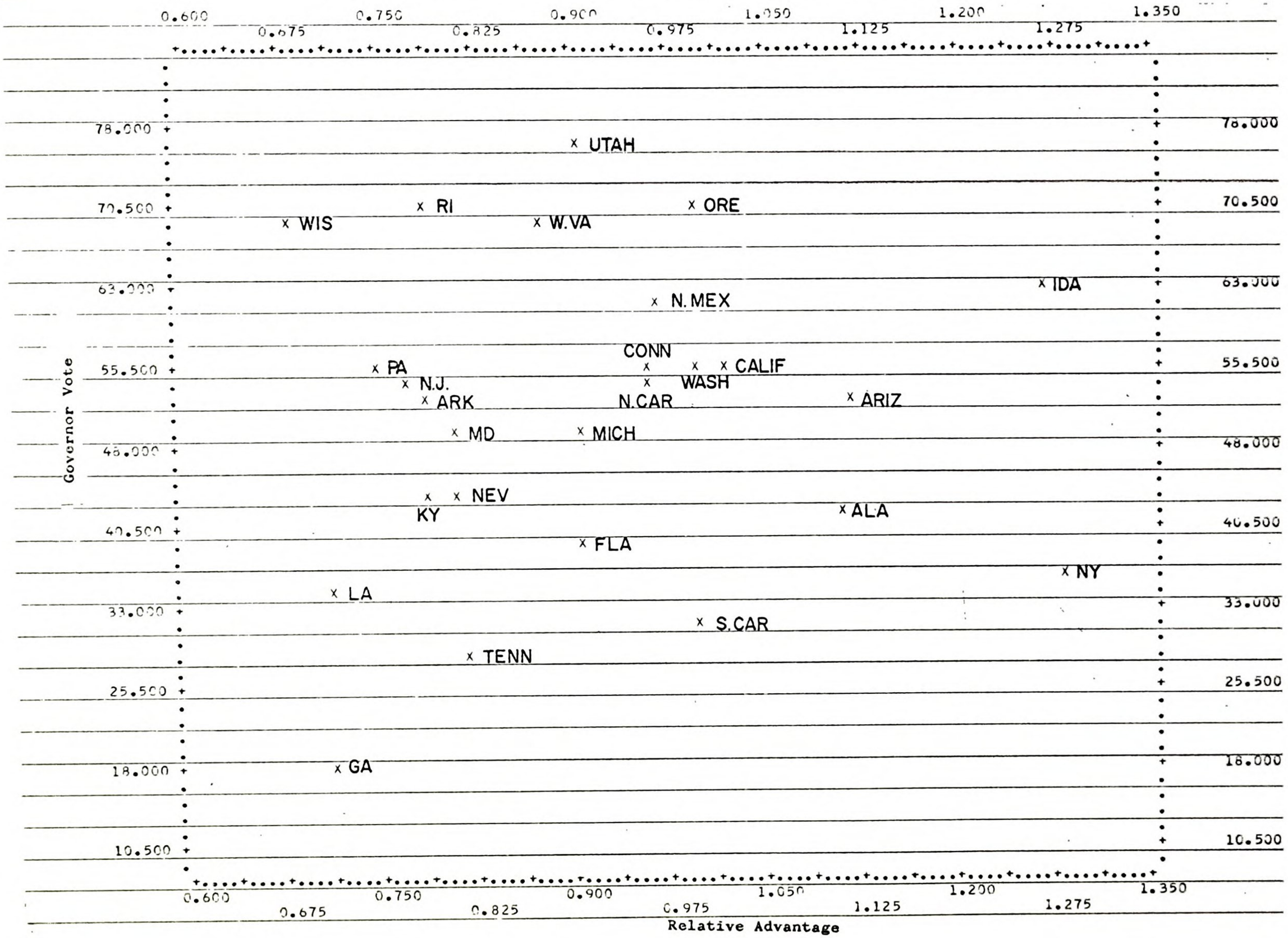


FIGURE V-32

State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969
and 1969 Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid

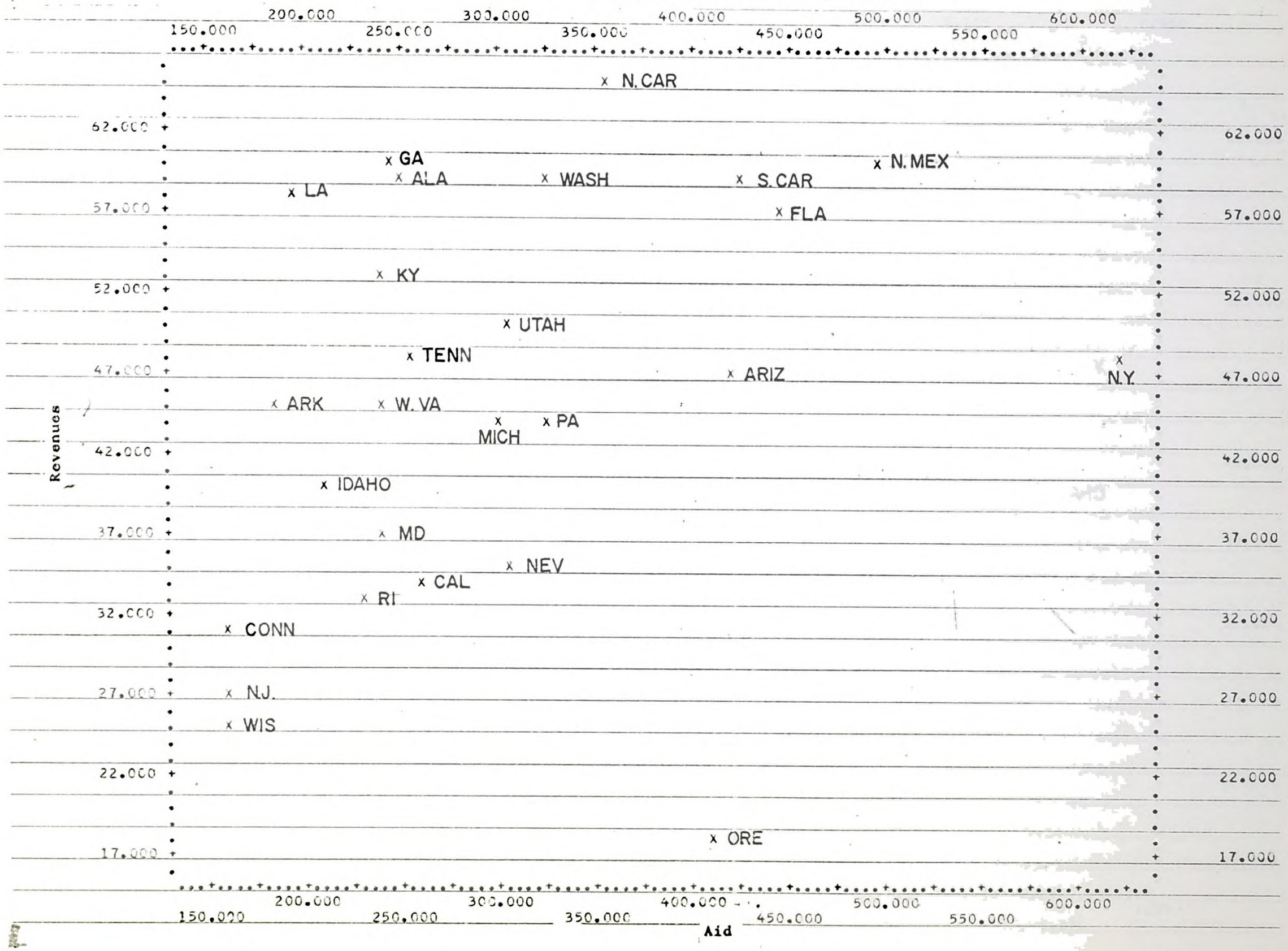
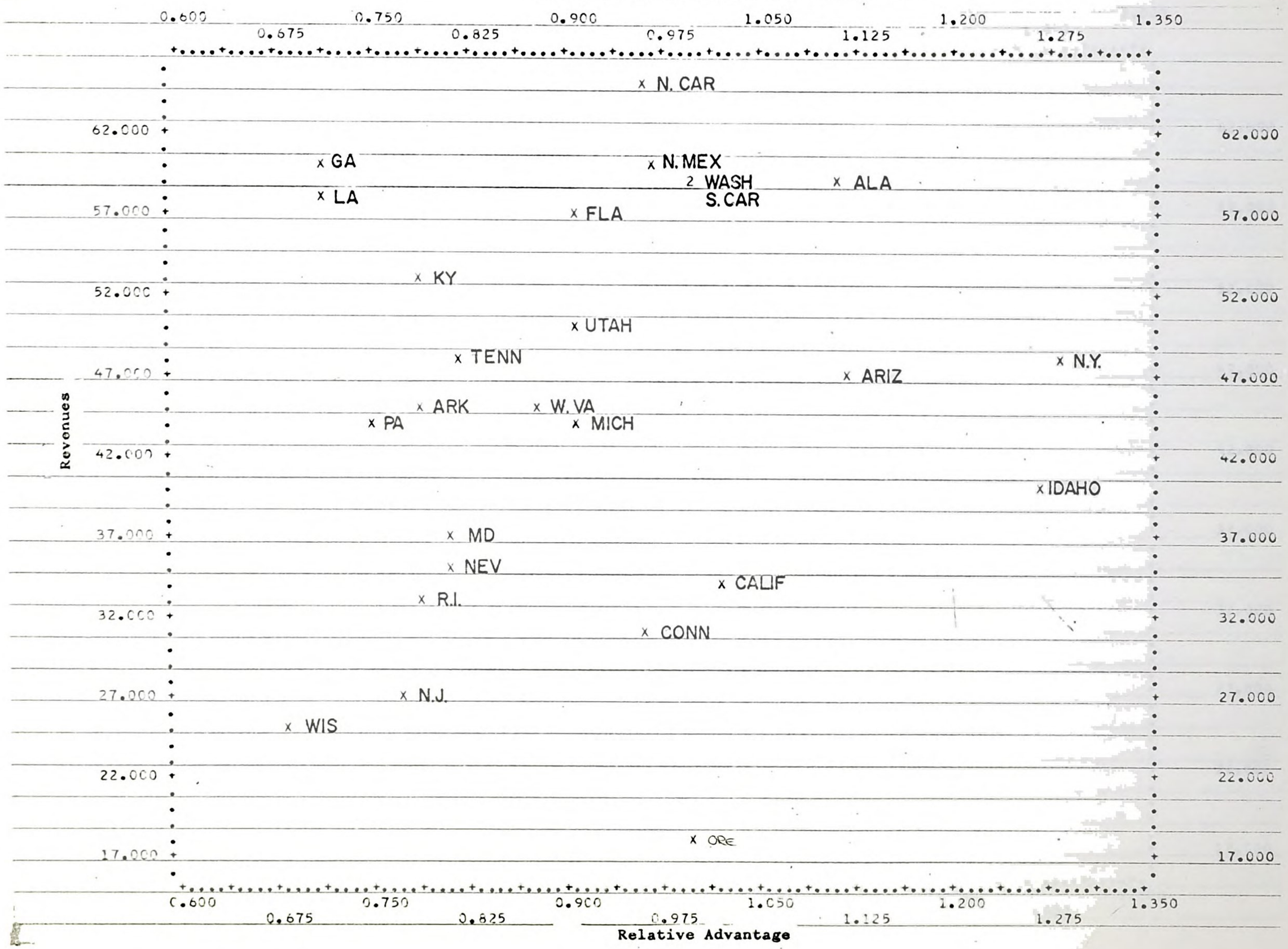


FIGURE V-33

State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969
and 1969 Metropolitan Relative Advantage



Revenues

Relative Advantage

FIGURE V-34

State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969
and Change in Metropolitan Per Pupil Aid, 1962-1969

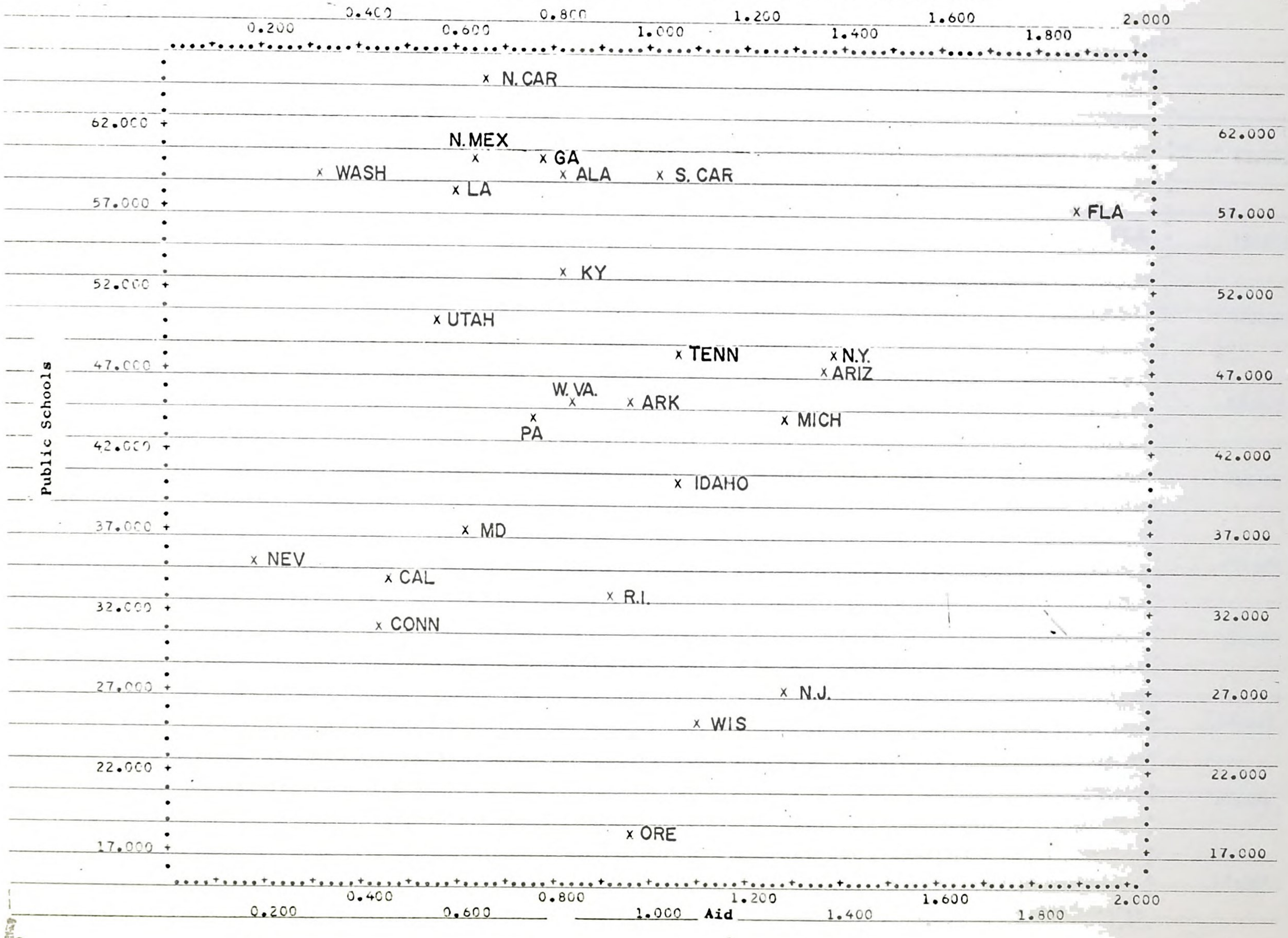
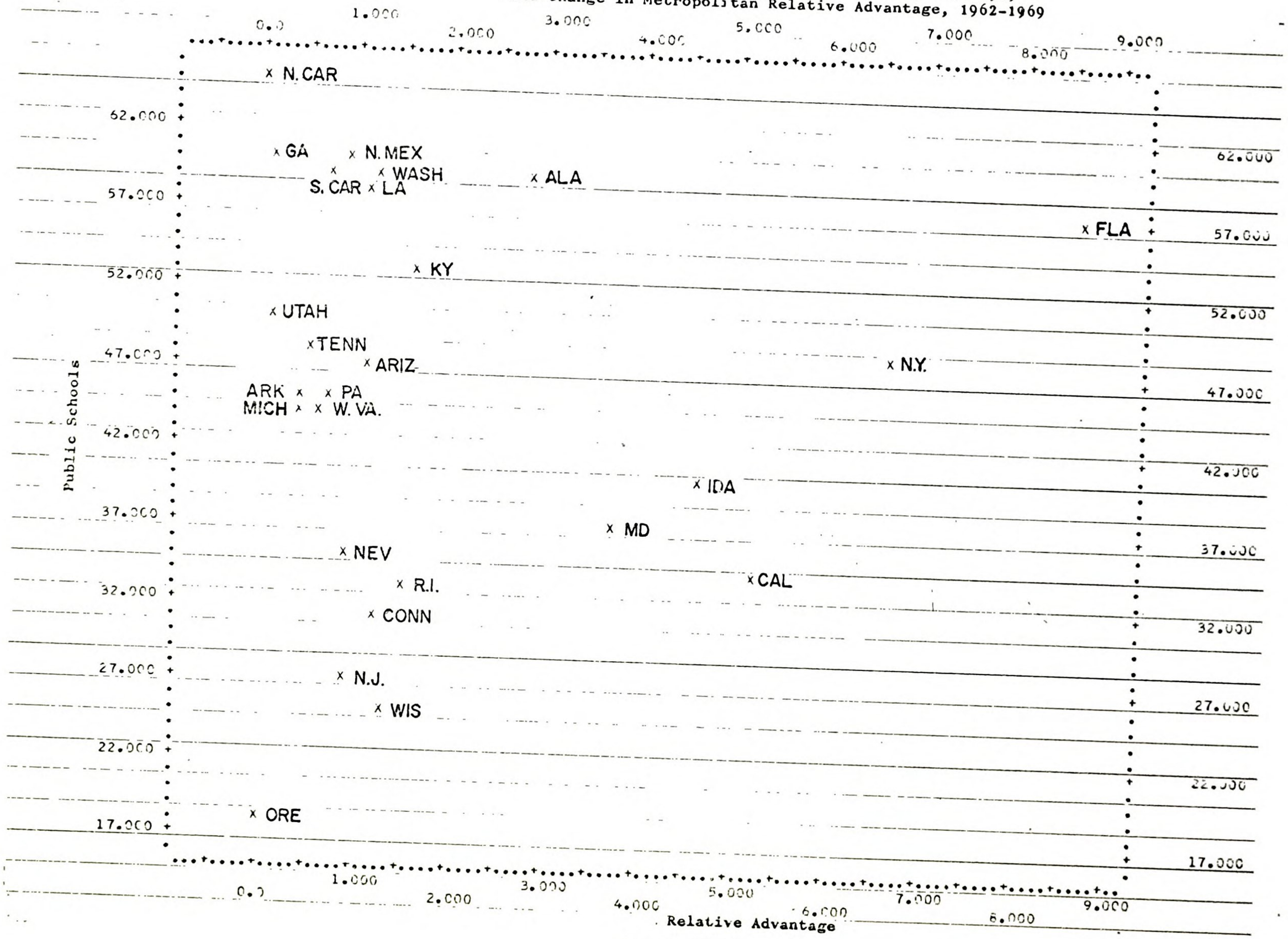


FIGURE V-35

State Percent of Total Public School Revenues in 1969
and Change in Metropolitan Relative Advantage, 1962-1969



MICHIGAN STATE UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
3 1293 03061 3701